

THE  
Eighth Booke of the  
Myrror of Knight-  
hood.

*Being the third of the third Part.*

Englified out of the Spanish tongue.

*---Pictoribus atq; poetis  
Quid licet audendi semper fuit æqua potestas.*



L O N D O N

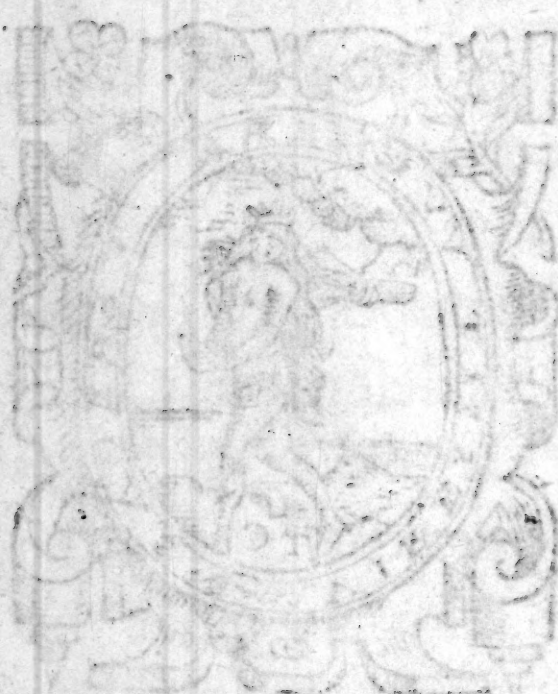
Printed by Thomas Creede, for Cuthbert Burbey, and are to  
be sold at his shop neare the Royall Exchange.

I 5 9 9.



THE  
Eighth Booke of the  
Myrror of Knight-  
hood.

Being the third of the Spanish  
Englished out of the Spanish tongue.  
—Pictoribus atque poësis  
Quidlibet audendi semper licet æquus potestas



LONDON  
Printed by Thomas Cressel, for Christopher Barker, and are to  
be sold at his shop in the Royal Exchange  
1722



# TO THE RIGHT NOBLE, MAGNIFICENT,

and euer honoured, *Syr Edward*

*Wootton Knight.*



He grateful remembrance  
(right Noble Syr,) of your  
many fauors extended to-  
wards my deceased vncle,  
& nothing extenuated to-  
wards my liuing Aunte,  
crauing a supream com-  
maund ouer my oblyged  
thoughts, inforceth (where

satisfactiō cannot equally ballance those deserts)  
an acknowledgement of an euerlasting thankfull  
mind. If therefore the hopes of an vntried seruant,  
may by future merites deserue any liking, or the  
merits of your own Heroicke worths (whose sole  
shadow inables my weaknesse) may adde corage  
to a discouraged spirit, thus to passe the limits of  
welbecomming dutie: Oh then pardon the pre-  
sumptiō, that dares choose this means to expresse  
his true zeale vnto your seruice. For though the  
matter nor the methode, befits neither your wise-  
dome, nor authoritie, yet let the innocency of my  
vnstained soule, be made happie by your accep-  
tance of these fewe sheetes of blotted paper. And



*The Epistle Dedicatorie.*

if my audacitie (which I confesse) haue offended, impute it to proceede by motiue from the praises of your immortall vertues, whose excellencies the shrill voyce of fame hauing borrowed the mouths of those, that they, with adamantine power haue attracted to your affectiō, hath amply propagated through the worlds wide cōtinent. Or if the matter be impleasing, be that fault attributed mine, in selecting so fabulous a subiect, to be protected by so great a Patron. But yet (Magnanimous sir) suffer the pleasing inuentiō for the original language sake, excusing that error, drown the memory of the offence, in the black center of obliuion. But for the rude stile, & harsh vnpollisht phrase, oh there is no comfort can expel that discōsolated fear, vnles the euer memorable noblenes of your grace (thinking me to be what I am not) shall (lightning my darknesse) make me seeme gracious in your all-gracing sight, omitting, and remitting what euer deserueth blame, & by smiling on so smal a talent, not vtterly cōdemne my immaculate sinceritie, to your neuer-dying worthines. Whose perpetuitie, together with all your most happie desires, may the omnipotent powers of that almightie maiestie, whose breath commands both heaūen, earth and seas, effectuate with eternall felicitie.

*Euermore deuoted to your  
Worships seruice.*



To the Reader.



# TO THE COVRT- ous Reader.



*I confessing my owne many faultes, iudge me (kind Gentlemen) worthy lesse blame. But beleue me, by reposing too much confidence on the Presse, hath not only aggravated, but most grosely added to my errors, making mee haule downe right before your presence, like an abortiue childe, thrust into the world before his time. Where you dislike, vtterly dispise not, but thinke I would bee what I am not, and so for your sakes, wishe I were twentie times farre better.*

*Neuerthelesse, let not my offences staine the deserued praises which the sweete Poeticall inuentions of a speciall, and my most deare friende, hath intermixt with my rude prose, doth merite. For his sake my hopes are the stronger, which intreate your gentle censures on my well-meaning intent, amending, where there is no cause of commending, so  
shall*



# To the Reader.

*shall I still remaine debtor for your courtesies, vntill with  
larger satisfaction, I may in part manifest  
my due thankfulnesse.*

L. A.







# THE THIRD BOOKE

## OF THE THIRD PART OF THE

*Myrror of Knighthood*: Containing the high and mighty deeds of the sonnes and Nephews of the Emperor

*Trebatio*, with the valiant acts of other Princes and Knights.

*Together with the excellent deeds of warlike Ladies, with the*

*end and dissolution of the three most famous Inchaunt-*

*ments of Lyriana, Roselia of Rome, and the Ce-*

*lebrated bewteous Linda, Brydes, Princeesse*

*of the Scythians.*

### CHAP. I.

Who *Brauorant* was, and why he left the *Serpentarian Isle*, to passe into *Grecia*.



When the dreadfull report of cruell Armes and Warre (mentioned in the third Booke of the first part of this *Historie*) was noysed through all the *Vagan Nations*, assembling, and in one uniting their severall puissant Hostes, vnder the conduct and commaund of *Alicandro*, mightie Emperour of *Scythians*, marching vnder his Ensignes against the *Grecians*, with intent of mortall re-

venge, utterly to subuert that Monarchy, leuelling *Constantinople* the seate of their Empyre with the earth, with perpetuall desolation.

Whither then to these euer memorizable Warres, accompanied



### The third Booke of the third Part

This *Scythian* Monarche, one that for strength, valour and high deeds, held ouer all *Pagan* Knights and mightie *Gyants*, chiefe soueraigntie, in all military actions, as being of the fearcest, sole supreme Lord, called the *Gran Bradamante Campeon*: who procuring to eternize the memory of his linage, desired to haue a sonne so absolute in all accomplishments, that ioyfully he might passe this life, with assurance that none but he should imperate all those *Orient* Isles, in whose Conquest he had shed so much humane blood.

To effect which desire, he begot the most mightie *Bramarant*, of himselfe the onely homicide: as *Lirgandeo* in the first Booke of the second part hath recorded.

With like intent as the Father, departed the sonne, for ere hee left his Countrey, hee procured it, being in loue with a *Gyantesse*, whose fame for valour, did penetrate the vaultie skies. With this went hee wondrous gladly to spill so much *Grecian* blood, where both Father and Sonne founde theyr Sepulchres in the *Greeke* fields.

Now then dooth *Galtener* record, that composed these two Parts, howe the *Gyantesse* conceived by the famous *Bramarante*, and at the expiration of her time of trauell, was deliuered of a childe, for strength moste admirable, if not vnmatchable expectation. For nourishing and bringing him vp as the proud father was, not with humane milke, but of *Dunces*, *Tyggers*, and *Lyonesses*, whereof that Island yeeldes infinite. At twelue yeares of age, he was as bigge and greate as any knight of highest stature. No wilde beast could outrunne him, howe swifte soeuer hee were: For so admirable was the lightnesse of the sturdie youth, that hee would ouertake them in their course, and with his hands disioynt them, peece by peece, on whose fleshe hee fedde. Being of foureteene yeares, hee caused an Armour to bee made of scales of Fish, bredde in the *Archlanticke* Sea, whose strength equalled the finest *Diamonde*: they were somewhat darke of colour, but hee garnisht them with *Pearles* and other riche stones, so excellently, that they seemed naturally to haue growne there. He was not of bodie disproportioned as other *Gyants*, but composed of such orderly well knit members, that onely in strength he was accounted *Gyantine*.



## of the Mirroure of Knighthood.

The newes of his father and Grandfathers death, he receiued ere he receiued the order of knighthood, which hee himselfe of himselfe did take, saying: None merited the honour to giue him that dignitie, and so became both agent and patient to aduance his pride vnto the end of his desire, which was so great, that it amazed the world, hauing farre greater forces then his father Bramarante.

So when hee saue himselfe with armes, and knewe the Greekes had slaine his Grandfather, hee solemnely protested on the hilts of his sword, to holde perpetuall enmitie with them. Although presently arriued other sorrowfull newes of his fathers death, and how the Greeke Princes with their owne hands intombde him, vowing to defend his armour against any that would presume to take them.

This somewhat pacified his rage, yet not to esteeme them his friends. It greeued his verie soule to heare that the king of Mauritania had dared to take away the armour of his deare father: that hee would stay no longer, thinking hee wronged his honour in the deferring of his iust reuenge.

This (aboue all the valiantest) hee had, that hee was courteous and gentle, and without sufficient cause would neuer undertake, nor of any euer demaunde the combatte. Arriving in *Grecia* hee became moze milder, not by meeting any that ouermatcht or equalled him in fight, but with the sole sight of the Greekish Ladies gallantnesse.

Hee was prone to loue, and in pursuite thereof performed no mean adventures. Finally betweene him and the furious Bembo, was all the strength of Paganisme diuided. Hee tooke his leaue of his subiects, (for then he, none was euermoze beloued of any) with whom hee left commaundement, that straight vpon report of warre against *Greece*, they should with the greatest power they could assemble, seeke him there, who onely with the son of the Gouvernour of his kingdome, called Artanio, left the confines of *Scythia*, where he raigned, purposing to imploy himselfe in nothing till he met the Mauritanian Brufaldoro, and to take from him the armes of his so deare and valiant father, calling himselfe vnfortunafe, in that he had not known him. His ship being rigged, and of all munition and tackling well provided, within one moneth hee entred the vaste Greeke Ocean, which not a little gladded him to be in his enemies countrie.



### The third Booke of the third Part

On the fourth day of his Nauigation (having thitherto met with no aduenture worthe a Historie) he descried making towards him a shippe, whereat he reioyced exceedingly, hoping to knowe newes of his demaund. The shippes in their meeting came so neare, that Bravorant might well discerne vpon the hatches of this strangers shippe, two knights of gallant disposition, clad in rich and strong Armoꝝ, with whose sight he rested highly contented, for in all his life he had not seene better accomplisht Gentlemen. They woꝛe their Helmes off to take the freshnesse of the aire, and seeing he ioyned his to their shippe, they put them on. And he approaching said.

Sir Knights, I shalbe highly fauoured to know neare what land we are, and how farre we be from the highest: Eleuated in contemplation were the two, seeing so stout a youth, for hauing his byꝛoꝛ raised, they saue his beard did not as then spring forth. The one replied, you now do nauigate sir knight in the Greekish sea, and are not aboue thꝛee daies sailing from *Constantinople*, for so many is it since we thence departed. In curtesie then tell me (required the sturdie youth) whether he that slew the Gran Campeon Bradaman, be now in that Citie, for it greatly concerns me to meete with him: And I cannot beleue, nor is it possible, that onely one to one he should ouercome him, whom all the Orientall Regions feared. The other answered, That Prince is in *Greece* (knight) and if you proue your selfe with him, you shall finde that was nothing he then did, so great is his valiantnesse and vnmached strength, whereto the heauens ioyned all their influences to make it incomparable.

To heare the Greeke so praised, did exceedingly bere the youth. So the Pagan replied saying. Surely if all in *Greece* be as valiant in fight, as they are singular in their Princes praises, they cannot be lesse esteemed then for the wonders of Chiuallry, and in the world soly excellent for deeds in armes.

So are they indeed (replied the knight) and he that dares gaine say it, I here desie him to moꝛtall battell. Desie me (answered he) Oh heauens! is this tollerable I heare: that befoze I see the countrie of my enemies, there should bee any to dare me and challenge me: therefore no longer would the intraged Pagan stay, but commaunding his barke to be grappled close with his aduersaries, hee dꝛewe forth his furious blade.

Against



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Against Mars would not the other refuse the combat, but in this gets he little: for being with triall assured of the Pagans strength, he straight imagined what small honour he should get in that attempt. For the raging Scythian raising his Merculean arme, & as that was the first blowe, so would he make it notable, which indeed was such a one, that lighting on the top of his helme, hee sliced away the one half, with part of the neck-piece, and descended on his shoulder with such waight, that he thought a Tower had fallen thereon: which made him fall vnto the ground vpon his handes, losing a piece of his vanbrace. Another seconded the new Mars, lessening the former with the furie of the latter, lighting on him as he rose in the middle of his strong shield, which as if it had bene made of a thin plate, was cleane cut from the one to the other end, and the blowe scarcely falling on his sight, astonished, felled him al along vpon the barke, voyding much blood thzogh his nose and mouth.

An Eagle in lightnesse was the Pagan, so would he follow leaping after him: but the supreme guider of the Orbes did otherwise appoint it, mouing his companion to succour him with incredible seleritie, making the Scythians of none effect, by giuing him a venturous thrust on the sturdie breast, making him recoyle backward: for had he leapt into their shippe, both had left their liues in the handes of the angrie Pagan, who like a furious Basiliske offered againe the dangerous leape, but to prohibit him, stood the amorous Florisarte, for it was he and his father, with the disguised Princesses that were there, who departing from Greece, were brought to that passe, that they accounted themselves surely vanquished, so fierce seemed the Scythian. By this was the father risen, reioyning at the good ayde his sonne had giuen him. Againe reioyned the two barkes, and their beeing both together, increased their hopes of victorie.

The haughtie youth refused them not, but rather toyed thereat, iudging them knights of estimation, and since so valiant tokens they shewed thereof, he thought that vanquishing them, some honour he might atchieue by the conquest. He was iraged against the same for disturbing him from winning the enterance of their ship: and so suffering a mightie blow, that had he not bene Brauorant that receiued it, no other could haue the heart to endure the second.

At his pleasure did he reache the beloued Florisarte on the one



### The third Part of the third Booke

side of his shield. Farre did not the sword enter, for the Scythian staid his arm, but all that it reached, which was the shield it snatcht fro his hands, making him turne twice or thrice about, like with staggering to fall: he stept nigher to the edge, to discharge another, which happened as he would: for taking him about the shoulders, the blade bounded upwards, else it had strooke away his head: but so puissant was the furious stroake, that it disarmed all that side, and fell with such huge heauie strength, that it strooke him downe in the middle of the barke.

Like a swelling serpent became the father, seeing his sonne so handled, that with the utmost of his strength he discharged his rage vpon the Gygantine youth, who not respecting it, would not ward it (but to bee giuen by the hands of the valiant Tharcian) it was too much proude confidence to respect it: which made him see more starres then the loftie Firmament contained. He staggered too vnseemely steppes backwards, almost falling, but recouering himselfe, he somed through the Wyze like a hunted Boze: blaspheming irreligiously against his goddesse.

By this time came the sonne, and knowing that one onely knight handled them in that manner, with both his hands hee laid vpon his Helme, which sounded like a bell. In all his life he had not receiued the like: for it made him bend his head with no litle paine: and with more speed then he would, euen to his best. Scarcely had the sonne executed his, when the father discharged an other in the same place. They forced him to set his hands on the ground: It was to their will, for returning more furious then a hunted Lyon in his greatest rage, as he rose, with a counterbuffe he tumbled the father on the middest of his backe, so soze bzused with the blowe, that almost hee could not after stand on his feete. The sonne maintained the fight, procuring rather to defend himselfe from the Pagans fierce blowes, then to offend.

But what auailleth it? for the father being arriued in his helpe, their aduersary neuer fully reached them any blowe, but he lanced forth their blood, wherewith they both were withal couered, and although they had somewhat wearied and more intraged him, yet was his Armour neither cut nor rased, and had the battle bene made on land, it had

ere



## of the Mirrour of Knighthod.

ere this bene ended, either with death or vanquishment of both. For the haughtie youth was bozne to fight, finding ease therein: and so had he in the ende of thre houre, so tyred and wounded them, that longer they could scarce holde out: Yet for all this, did not the Knights lose any part of their courage, which was such, that they forced the son of Bramarant to increase in forces, bellowing like a bayted Bull: and yet highly esteeming them, in respect of their shewen valour.

Long hadde hee desired to winne their shippe, and so now to accomplish the same: with a thrust, hee dzaue the Argentarian Prince to the farthest side of it, and after him woulde hee haue leapt, if that a suddaine whirle-winde that happened, hadde not parted farre asunder both shippes, following after it, so great a misty thicke fogge, with so much thundring and lightning, that the proudest heart was daunted with feare.

Which beeing past, they sawe themselves so sundred, that straight eyther lost the sight of the other, and in the Princes Shippe, immeasurable was their grieve for the two Pages losse, that in that tempest were conueyed away: insomuch, that the amorous Florisart was like to runne madde with sorowe: and it was not much, for none (living) was euer better entertained.

Heere their friende Nabato would not leaue them with such paine, so hee appeared to them in theyr Barke, saying.

Valiant Princes, there is no cause why you shuld graue at the heauens decre, and what is directed according to their will: and thinke it not little that you haue sustained your selues so long against that Vagan: for there be fewe on the earth so valiant as he: and let this be no strangenesse to aggrauate your mindes, for it will alwaies redound to the hono<sup>r</sup> of Greece. Touching the Pages, it was time they should returne to whom sent them: and therefore sorow not, for they are in place where they shall bee entreated as their persons do deserue.

And you gallant Florisart, that haue most reason of grief, take courage: for only it must most aduance your immortall hono<sup>r</sup>. And one day whe<sup>n</sup> least



### The third Booke of the third Part

least you thinke of your glozy, you shall be challenged to obserue and perfoyme your promise giuen to Artimio, accounting (thzough the great content you then shall receiue) all the troubles and tormenting passions you shall hencefozth thitherto endure (which will not be few) to be but the passage of so many pleasures: but against many others that may befall you, your valour and fortitude is very sufficient.

So soone as you bee arriued at *Argentaria* (foz so it behoueth the ease and quietnesse of Rosabell) with the greatest flecte of ships and gallies (detracting no time) that you may make ready, take your course towards the Chappell of Saint George. Foz in despite of our mortall and great enemye Lupercio, He place a signall on Lyrianas inchauntment, that thereby you may repaire thither, seeing it a very far off: and let there be no negligent forgetfulness herein, foz it toucheth no lesse then the Ladies libertie, to be done by Grækes and their friends, by the happie comming of the vnknowne Lyon.

And hereupon he tooke his leaue, ending his speech, and departed from them. Who no sooner landed in their dominions, and being receiued with the loue that Flora did beare them, they gaue order foz all what the wiseman had told them, gathering together of both kingdoms thzee hundred royall gallies, well prouided with most warlike men, and all manner of other necessarie munition. What they did, shall bee related.

Foz thzee miles from *Rome* appeared a most strange inchauntment, making at the firing so mightie a noise, that all the Gallies there about did resound, and that famous Citie trembled with the sound. The Emperoꝝ was amazed, not knowing the cause of that sudden earth-quake: But after a while there came a knight that told him, how in the Forrest there was to bee seene a great and wondrous Castle of maruellous and seldome seene worke: and that hauing read certain letters wzitten on a Pillar, he perceiued it to be the inchauntment of the Princesse Roselia. Great contentment receiued her father and mother, to know newes of their deare daughter, hauing thitherto supposed her dead: hoping now assuredly to see her, since she was brought to such a place. Nabato did comfort them, saying: The time would come, they should see her, receiuing moze ioy then at that instant they had.



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

So he departed from them, procuring the disinchaunting of Lyriana, (and see if thereby the great warres might be appeased, which he imagined would about her happen) to espouse her to Rosabel; and as he thought, he presently put it in execution, setting in despite of Luperchio, (having greater skill then he) on the top of the marvellous Tower, a burning Cloud, flaming so mightily, that it seemed continually to cast upwards flames of inextinguable fire. It was seene farre off, and therefore there were fewe vppon the seas but repaired thither, although without it, there had not failed to come the famous Bembo, with the Souldan of Egypt, which was a brother to him slaine, yet farre moze stronger. Neither at his due time wanted the great Lord of Nyquea himselte, with a mightie Fleet. For Luperchio found that Greeke Prince should end the aduenture, and maugre all the world, beare away Lyriana: and to forbid that no other knight might approach to proue the aduenture, he stirred vp and moued the valiantest knights in the whole vniuerse against the Greeces, as hereafter shall at large be exprest. And yet by the signe, the great Magician Nabato set, all the flower of Grecia vnited, was there assembled. The mightie Bravorant could not but see it, for parting from the two famous Princes, his Galley so navigated the Mediterranean Ocean, that he sawe the fearefull flames that issued from the Sea. Desirous to see such straunge aduentures, was the stout and fierce Pagan, and to proue himselte therein, ioying to haue left his Countrey, to participate of his begunne fights, imagining that his strong and valiant arme was sufficient to terminate such a deede, he commaunded thither to be directed, where quickly he arriued, amazed to see the Tower and the marvellous workmanship thereof, vnable to conceiue who could frame so admirable a thing. He read y<sup>e</sup> superscriptions, & not regarding what Armes were required for that attempt, he flung (as Bembo had done) at one of the Pillers whereon the Tower was built: but at that instant, there arose so much fire, that all his fury & strength nothing auailing him, with want inough thereof he gaue ouer, where his Armour stood him in no small sted, for being made of those bones that are most colde, they were able to defend some part of the heate of that fire, and blaspheming on his Goddes, he stood looking if he could finde any other entrance: and seeing none, he thought it best to depart, bowing to returne thither, and defend that none other should trie it,

C

since



## The third Part of the third Booke

Since he had not ended it, it cost many liues: and to perfoꝛme it, he commaunded his Pilot to make towardeſ Mauritania, foꝛ he deſired to be there, to demaund his fathers Armes of Brufaldoro, oꝛ loſe his life in their purſuite. The weather was faire, calme, and prosperous, fauouring his voyage, foꝛ in eight daies he landed there: he was glad thereof, and ſo tooke forth a mightie roane Courſer, the beſt that all his Countrey did affoꝛd, of ſuch foꝛce, as it eaſily might beare the ſturdie youth. On another mounted his Squier Artanio, and taking the laꝛgeſt path, he beganne to pace forth in haſte, to learne of ſome one, if the king of that lande were there to ſeeke him. Straight was he aſſured ther of, reioycing greatly thereat, being perſwaded none could diſturbe him from winning the Armour that once belonged to his deare father. But to reſt himſelfe, he entered thꝛough a faire Foꝛreſt, paſſing that day there, til it was time to ſleepe, which was but little, by reaſon of that which beſell him.

### CHAP. II.

What hapned vnto the mightie *Bravorant*, with a ſtrange knight, and who he was.



Scarce was the middle houre of that ſame ſeaſon paſt, when reſt in ſilent quietneſſe ſurpriſeth the waking eyes of euery one, to make them ceaſe their laborious daily toyle, ſuffering the wandering paſſengers of gloomy darkeneſſe, with night tripping Fairies to progreſſe thꝛough thoſe walks, that the abſence of their exilde light doeth limit them, in blacke obſcuritie: when a ſuddain new alteration infoꝛced the haughtie Pagan from his accuſtomed vncontroled ſleepe. Foꝛ he heard not far from him, the complaints of ſome one, whoſe neceſſitie vꝛged him to lament. He was as is ſaid, in nature contrary to all others of his kind, and like his Father onely in ſtrength. Foꝛ he pittied thoſe diſtreſſed, offering his perſon in theyꝛ required aide: hee roſe, and cloſing his Beauer, went to the place  
from



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

from whence he heard the plaintes, and by the pale shine of Cynthias watery beames, he sawe sitting at the foote of a knottie Dake, a well proportioned knight, apparrelled in most rich Armour, complaining of loue. The Pagan knew not what it ment, and therefore to see his effects, he got behinde another Tree verie neare vnto the knight: who had not all that night slept, bewayling his chaunce, neyther would he do it, but to participate his grieve to those that felt it not. So not regarding, because not seeing the Pagan, he beganne with a thousand sighes, witnesses of his soules sorow, to utter the greued burthen it sustained: and with such grace, that Brauorant rested amazed, iudging him some celestiaall creature, respecting the sweete harmony of his voyces, he did with all attention listen, and ouerheard the Louer in this maner sing against Fortune, these verses following.

**F**ortune is blinde, she lookes on no mans need,  
And deafe, she hearkens vnto no mans call;  
And cruell, she respects not who doth bleed,  
And enuious, she reioyceth at ones fall.  
No Bewtie can vnmaske her hood-winck't eies,  
No Force can driue attention to her eares:  
No Griefe make her dead-sleeping pittie rise,  
Nor is her Enuie thaw'd with Vertues teares.  
She at aduentures lets her Favours flie,  
Without proportion, without due regards:  
The base vnworthy, now she mounts on hie,  
And fattereth dunghils with her best rewards.  
Anon they tumble to their first estate,  
And other on the tottering wheele are set:  
Who neuer finde repentance, till too late,  
And then they finde it in sad sorrowes net.  
Such fortune is, and oh what hap haue I  
To serue a Goddesse lighter then the winde:  
Constant in nothing, but inconstancy,  
As also enuious, cruel, deafe and blinde.  
Fortune is blind, Oh what can me betide?  
But blind mishap, that serue so blind a guide.



### The third Booke of the third Part

With a breathlesse heart-breaking (hay me) ended the Louer, principiating her oppressed soules discharge thus. What auailed it, Oh what auailed it me (heroycke warrio?) so to my honours cost, & reputations wrack, to reueale vnto thee the tenure of my Loues secrets, whose tribute is only due to thy incomparable merits? It was moze then became me, violating thole immaculate rytes of ours, which are first to be intreated, and then vpon sufficient pzoofe, to like. I knowe not on whom to complaine? not of my selfe, for neuer was any better imployed, nor yet their thoughts higher sublimated? No, I complaine of my hard fortune, for that the sacrifice of my will offered in his hands, could be no meanes to confirme in part, the hope he gaue me on the sandes of the Greeke sea coast, to be soly mine. For if I so now vnderstand it, who would be so weake, and so mistrustfull a Louer, as with so many sorowes to seeke the thing loued, and with a number of infinit sighes, that vnsought for, would mæte me, since I would not refuse what he admitted, nor could my Loue fancie but what he desired, louing? But O grieve, I cannot beleue, but that misfortune and my selfe, were both bozne Twinnes at one selfesame birth. O haughtie Tynacrian, thinke not but it is a blot to thy immortall fame, to thewe thy selfe cruel & vnkind, gainst him whom hath yeelded soule & thoughts to thee. It is a tyrannie altogether vnbefæming whom thou art, and what thou diddest protest at our departure. The sterne fierce Pagan would not interrupt him, but astonied to heare what he said, hearkened, vnable to resolute whether man or woman he was. All the night past they away, one in his laments, and the other in his newe doubts, vntil the appearing of Auroras shine began to giue warning of the morning Sunnes vyse. And then leauing his stand, went towards the knight, that seeing it was day, had laced on his helme, fearing to be knowne.

The knightly Gyant seeing him, with exceeding courtesie, that most adozned him, he beganne to speake. You haue inforced me (sir knight) to passe this night so disquietted, by hearing you publish your grieve, that in recompence thereof, I intreate you I may knowe the cause, and if the hazarding of my person to woozke your content, may bee a seruice accepted, I shall rest happie to bee so imployed.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

The Ladie well noted him, thinking she had neuer sene a braver nor better armed knight, and his ciuill demenour, bound her to a milde answer, but she was in such an amorous rage, that not considering the end, replied. Why then, worse will the day be to me, then was the night to you, knowing that you haue heard what the verie soule dares not trust it selfe withall, and I know not what lawe of armes admits it. Your fauour I refuse, for hauing committed such an offence, as to require the knowledge of a strangers deare hearts secret, against his will that loues, which if I declare, how should I thinke it could be conceald by you? So may you returne, for the græfe that mœ torments, is pleasant onely in concealement.

I had not thought (replied the Pagan) that thzough intreating thee, with what amongst good knights is vsed, should haue put thee in that arrogant confidence, as to neede none others ayde, beeing a thing so contrarie to reason. If thou knewest the lawe of Loue (replied the Knight) thou should knowe there is no happinesse therein, but to loue with secrecie, for that is it that assureth any doubtfull hope. But to recount my cares to one that cānot redresse them, with moze then a dolefull (I am sorrie) we sigh moze in hauing a straungers companie, then for discret circumspectnesse.

It cannot be exprest what rage the Pagan conceived, for being insolently bolde, he was onely noted of immoderate rashnesse, and so answered. Then, that thou mayest know that to haue told it me was thy aduantage, I ingage thee to the battell, that by taking away thy pulling life, the paines whereof thou doest complaine, may also end. Mars was not moze fierce then the Louer, beeing angered, and so without longer stay, drew forth one of the worlds best blades. Mightie hee was: but hee met with that strength whereto Mylos forces neuer reacht, thzough conceived rage he was quicker in executing his blow, discharging it on the shield, of which to the ground hee thzewe a peece, beating the rest so heauily on his heade, that it almost astonished him. He stept in with his right foote, and with a steddie strong thrust he forst him with staggering paces backwards: he wold not yet leaue the chase for turning his sword vnderhand, let it flie at his right thigh, making his aduersaries fleshy feeble the cutting of his sharpe blade.

Neuer was Serpent in the desert Libia moze rigorous then the Pagan now did returne vpon the knight, and where he thought his blow



### The third Booke of the third Part

would be of more effect, thither hee stricke: the other raised his shield, but it was of no defence, for although hee did not cut it, through the finesse of the temper, yet it so charged him, that hee set his hands on the ground, and ere hee rose, hee felt another, which made him thinke hee sawe the starrie firmament.

The blood congealed in his mouth, and freezed in his bodie, seeing the fiercenesse of the Dagan, which hee thought farre to exceede the Greeke Princes. He rose up, for hee was couragious, minding to vse his nimblenesse, but as therein the Scythian exceeded the swiftnesse of any Part, it auaild him not from receiuing most cruell blowes, kissing the earth sometimes with his knees, and sometimes with his handes. Neuer felt he himselfe so persecuted, nor at the poynt to lose the fame he had obtained for valour, and therefore did hee redouble his blowes so strong and thicke, that the Dagan was forced to deuise newe defensive wards. Exceedingly he reioyced to see what braue knights he met in his iourney towards the parts of Grecia, deeming him of that countrie, where the Authors of his life were intombde.

This remembrance so vert him, that hee supposed it cowardise to continue in single combat so long: so letting a blowe flie aloft, hee discharged the seconde with such mightie strength on his aduersaries helme, that it rezounded like a bell: and not able to penetrate it, so heauily it waighed on one side, that breaking all the laces, buckles, and riuetts, it stricke it from his head, making the knight vpholde himselfe with his handes: but at his rising Apollos beautie seemed not so faire that day, as Floralizas great Alicandros Peere, that wandring thzogh straunge lands in search of her Poliphebo, had arriued there. In all his life did not the Dagan receiue such a blowe (as with her sight) for in all the same, he forgot not the memorie of that day: hee stayed his sword, and stepping forth, unlaced his helme, setting to view his sturdie visage, more faire then swartie, yet with many wrinkled checkes, and one great mole on his front, approued tokens of his excessive strength, his shield he cast away, and taking his sword by the poynt, (through the newe tuch of loue) hee spake with more ciuilitie then the most amorous.

Admired Goddesse, I beseech you pardon my mad presumption, although I feele alreadye the punishment thereof, for the not knowing you,



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

you, forced me to it, yet I repute it well, if it redownde not to your farther displeasure, which will be to me a more unhappier death, in that I haue seene the excellencie of beautie and valour: and so intreate you, as deseruer of farre more honour, you will accept my sword in signe of victorie, and Ile defend that all the world doth owe it you. It greatly delighted the Ladie to see the knights courtesie, and imagining he was of esteeme, replied. I will not (sir knight) haue you in all things take the better of the fight, for the victorie is yours, leauing not thereby indebted to your content. Her handes to kisse then required the newe Mars, thinking no greater good might bee expected then the present. Shee drew them from him, demanding who he was: So yoked was the Pagan, that he could not denie it, nor through contemplation say any thing, yet thus he spake.

There was no reason (diuine Goddesse) to intreate, what by commaunding makes me happie in obedience. I am called Brauorant, sonne to that famous Bramarant, which in Greece was deathes man to himselfe, and Nephewe to that Campeon, which lost his life by the hands of a Greeke Prince (although I cannot beleue it) and therefore haue I left my countrie, of purpose to be reuenged on the Greeks and the Mauritanian king, whose land we now tread, because hee tooke away my fathers armour: and also I come to know the Prince Meridian, whose vassaile I am, and greatest friend in respect of the loue that he and the mightie Midinaro his Grandfather did beare vnto my kindred. And this is all I can say, praying the like, not in regard of my relation, but that I may know my Soueraigne. Bound thereto was the Ladie, replying thus.

I greatly desire to knowe my stocke, and whom I am, that I might therein satisfie your content (brazz Brauorant:) and I assure you, that the most I knowe, is, that I knowe not whom I am, more then that a brother of mine and my selfe, were brought vpp together in a wood, without other conuersation then of a wise man, that did instruct vs in all vertues, whom wee reputed our father, till hee assured vs the contrarie, and through the accidents befallen, some haue tolde vs wee are the childezen of that so loued Prince Meridian. More I knowe not.



## The third Booke of the third Part

I beleue no lesse, but that those which are the earths chief lights (answered the amorous Scythian) deriue their diuine discent from the heauens, whence your sacred Grandfather proceeds. As they were in this conuersation, they sawe him comming whom they sought, mounted on a mightie Courser, he wore not then the armour of that Mars and mightie Bramarant, keeping them onely to weare in Grecia, the more to despight her Princes.

The Ladie knewe him, and tolde it the fierce Pagan, that cried out for ioy, saying. This aduenture (excellent Ladie) admits comparison solely with that of your knowledge. Now am I certaine of all good fortune, since the heauens haue set befoze mine eyes with so smal toyle the thing I most desired.

He arose with angrie paces, and called for his fierce horse. The like did the Ladie, lightly vaulting into the saddle. The Scythian was nothing enuious thereat, for in lightnesse the Orientall nations affoorded not his peere, and brandishing his lance, made against the Mauritanian: but what happeneth describeth the next Chapter.

### CHAP. III.

What befell vnto the mightie *Bramorant*, with the warrelike *Bru-faldoro*, the most cruell battell betweene them, and how they were parted by *Floraliza*.



Some content may the angrie aspect of the two warrtours moue, that representing Mars, either to the other approached. The Mauritanian with his accustomed pride spake first saying. What unexpected motion of suddaine alteration (knights) hath my comming sturde in yee? If you stand in any neede speake, for in the uttering consists the remedie.

Of nothing haue we neede (replied Campeons fierce Nephew, for if any had wrongd vs, we haue hands not to remit our remedie to others. That which hath moued this knight and my selfe with hastie paces to meete you, is onely to know what cause the Mauritanian king had, to take away the armes of that glorious Bramarant, knowing how



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

how thereby he angered the Graeke Princes, yet no matter for this (I seeke not their contents) but thou shouldst imagine, that a sonne, of his living, greater was the wrong to take them, since they were his right, guiding thy selfe thereto more by insolencie, then the dutie of a knight.

Never did the barbarous Sarazin nation know a more prouder Pageant then the king of Mauritania, and supposing him like to others he had tried, with a fearefull voyce hee replied. What, coward knight, thinkest thou that meeting with those armes, I would through feare leaue them, although I did incense the heauens, and anger euery one the earth contained? Oh, I wish I had them here to weare them in triumph of my valours victorie, making the powers of heauen knowe to thy cost, no terrene merits better deserues to weare them then Brufaldoro. While in the beginning was the Scythian, but being moued to rage, no Basseliske is like to him, so rozing like a bull, and turning his horse, casting his eyes vp to the skie, said. Is it possible that I living sole sonne to Bramarant should suffer this? and that any other but he should threaten me, permitting, lieths thou haste his armour, and detaines them, not to procure them, or lose my life in the enterprise? So great was their rage, that the one could neither prosecute his speech, nor the other make reply, leauing to their handes what their tongues could not vtter.

Now would I here (but I know not how I may) againe imploze your sacred helps (admired Ladies of vnspotted purities) but my impertunate tongue euermore tuned with this one vocal note, dasht my thoughts in their expected hopes. I dare, oh I dare not presume, least I should waken your slumbering displeasures, (they are worse then ten thousand wo-languishing deaths) to pray the comfort of a smile, the soules nourishment and hearts encourager, to tread the difficultie of Dedalus inextricable laborinth, or as Hercules to vndergo so many labors. But being repulst in selfe conceit, shall I flie to those chaste diuine Nymphs of that euerflowing fountaine of tongue inspiring musicke, that some one (not busied in the laies of loue) would inchaunt my rusticke penne with a delicious method, according to the two mightie warriours desires?

They did refuse my plaints, referring my Orizons to your desiding doom, submitting their wils to your greater commanding powers, whose

D

fauours



### The third Part of the third Booke

faunders in my behalf they promised to solicit. With trembling feare doe I once againe awaite your censures: Oh, in regard of their immaculate triple trinitie graunt it, be it but vnder the couert of a fained smile: whose obtained imagination swifter then the winde, brought the sterne combattants to incounter with more noyse, then Vulcans thunderboltes do rent the clowdie ayre amidst their furious passage, or fiercer then the tempestuous waues raised by the vnbridled rage of a sea-oye, turning whirlewinde, beate on the flintie rockes: yet was it nothing in respect of the horrour that these two rare in armes committed with their launces. Of knottie Dake were they, but arriuing at the best, brake as they were of wraque came or small reedes: either past by the other without motion, although the Horse at his turning about, thzough the astonishment of the shocke lost his right stirrope. Aloft with their swords raised together, they discharged them on their helms with more force, then doth a waterie current descending from a steepie hill brake thzough a riuers locke.

Venturous was the Mauritanians blowe, for it lighted on the toppe of his plumed crest, striking away all the steeled circuite, with part of the maled gorget, & on his shoulder praide the furious sword, falling so heauily, that he bowed belowe his horse necke. On the shield did the fierce youth strike the Mauritanian, it is no defence against the rigorous arme, for the halfe it tooke away, making him shake like an Aspen leafe. They were both most skilfull, so turned they to second others, and the Affricanian let flie a poynt, which the youth surely felt, who reacht him ere he could fetch home his arme, with a crosse counterbutte on the side of his helme, that all that part he left disarmed, ouerturning him more then hee willingly would on his left stirrope: it was no occasion to be lost, so assalting with his sword inwards before he could ward it, did giue another no lesse dangerous on his sight, so mightie, that the blood gusht from his nose.

Neuer was troden Serpent more rigorous then now the Affricanian returned, that seeing himselfe so handled, crushing one tooth with another, with his blade mounted on high, executed on his helme such a blowe, that it almost strooke him senselesse. Hee well perceiued his alteration, so tooke he the aduantage entring with a cruell thrust, had not his armes beene as they were, there had the battell ended: but they were so strong, that the sword could not enter them, so sliding thence,



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

it lighted twirt the buckles of his brest, cutting down his strong male, and he was happie to shrinke his bodie to himselfe, else hee had bene mortally wounded. He past his carrier so swiftly, that the Scythian could not strike him when he wold. With such nimblenes returned the haughtie Affrican, that his courage amazed the invincible youth. But now was hee at the vtmost of his rage, and willing to make it known, casting his shield at his backe, let drive at him a most mightie blowe. Ward it with his sword and the remnant of his shielde would the African: it was of no defence, for from one to the other end it was cleane divided in two, and meeting with his sword, both made so cruell a stroke on his helme, that though it contained two fingers in thicknesse, he gaue him a perillous wound on his left side.

The Mauritanian would not deferre his payment, for closing his sword firmly, and seeing him without shield, discharged the puissance of his armes on his sure helme, it was it saued his life, and his head from cleaving: neuerthelesse it was so heauie, that it strooke him along vpon his couriers backe, redoubling another vpon his broad breast, that it almost stopt the passage of his breath. Admirable was the sight of the more then cruell fight: for Apollo hauing made his course vnto the middest of the vaultie heauens, there stayed to gaze vpon their warre, glad to see the warricours, that without signe of advantage, had foure houres maintained their fierce combat. Yet something better sped the Scythian, by reason of his impenitrable armes that kept his bodie from cutting. Which was not so with the Mauritanian, for in some places was he sore hurt, but yet was no cause to make him shewe any faintnesse, & it rather increased his courage to see his blood inamell the earth. Amazed stood the gallant Ladie to vewe the Pagans battel, iudging the worlds whole strength was twirt these two reparted. Greatly she desired to giue order in parting them, imagining y<sup>e</sup> with the death of any Greece, she lost one of the valiantest and greatest enemies she had. This toucht her verie soule: yet would she not seeme to disgrace the mightie Brauorant: so shee againe regazed on the fight, thinking in the end he would get the better, saming most Haister thereof. He gaue the other a blowe ere she could terminate her presumption, vpon his helme, that in a trance hee strooke him on his horse crupper. A while was he carried so about the field, yet not so long, that he might second another ere hee recovered himselfe.



### The third Booke of the third Part

Who like a Hercanian Tiger, with his sword twirt both handes, executed his rage vpon his shield: so mightily did it ioyne with his head, that it astonisht him, and with another almost ouerthrewe him. The raging Mountain Lyonesse wanting her whelps, is like a milde lambe, compared with the puissant matchlesse Scythian, that renouncing his Gods with execrable blasphemies, spurd against the Moze, and so eager was he in his carrier, that he closed so neare hee could not execute his blowe, moze then cast his armes about him with such power, that he snatcht him from his saddle, whose waight forst him to leaue his stirropes & leape after him, falling both on the hard ground, with moze strength they embraced then doth the tender Iuie incompasse about the sturdie Oake.

A good while tumbled they vp and downe the earth, till seeing neither could so vanquish his aduersarie, at once they parted, repairing to their weapons, whose sight once moze might satisfie any minde of the like desire: for if the Mauritanian be nimble, the Scythian is a Roe in swiftnesse.

Here might Mars himselfe learne as in a schoole, and with militarie principles gorge his sight. For being a foote on ground, it was admirable, to note the dexteritie wherewith they assaulted, and skilful manner of retires. Moze noyle made they then Vulcans Cyclopean workemen. Three houres of the afternoone were past, and they without feare of any losse, redoubled their blowes as in the beginning. Moze vled to armes was the Moze: but the youth was borne with his steeled coate, finding ease amiddest the greatest warre: so beganne hee to vaunt of his aduantage to the Mauritanians cosse, that beeing wounded, beganne to faint, yet not so plainly, but would diuers times put his battell in hazard.

By this would Tytans shining beames obscure his splendor, breaching it in the Spanish Ocean, when the Ladie apparantly sawe the aduantage on Brauorants partie, and iudged him sufficiently honored therewith, leapt from her horse, and stepping betweene them, said. Apart, apart, braue warriours, for it is no reason about a trifle of so small importance, you should make the world Orphant of your persons. Captiuated was the Pagan in the gines of his Ladies gallantnesse, that he replied thus.

Heroycke



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Heroicke Knight, though in some respect I be herein wzonged, I wil not worke your discontent, and do leaue the battle in this estate. I take vpon me valiant knight (said he) the wzong offered you (if it be any to leaue the fight) and I doubt not but this knight wil take it well to cease it at this time.

Well perceiued the Mauritanian he might be fully perswaded now to haue the wzst, so he answered, he was content, and they should not want another time to ende it. Thankfull vnto him for it was Floraliza, and offering him her friendship, the Moore departed, bearing with him inough to talke off in his Citie, of the Scythians courage. They sat them downe, and the youth tooke off his helme: the like did the Ladie, discoursing of Brufaldoros brauery. This vertue among the rest, greatly adozned Brauorant, that he neuer tooke from any the merites that he thought him worzhie of. So was he first in giuing a beginning to Brufaldoros praises. No better medicine could come to the lustie youth, then the sight of that humane Goddesse, whose belotie had so enchanted his senses, that he iudged her all diuine.

He was not constant, for seeing the Greeke Ladies, he straight forgot Floraliza, only the supremacy of belotie, making change in him. Most part of the night past they with different thoughts: for the Pagan was soly ouerwhelmed in Contemplation of the Ladies graces, not daring to manifest his glozie, for yet he was not sufficiently toucht with loues fierie euil.

The Lady though she was glad to haue such company, were it but because he was an enemy to the Greekes, answered with her tong what her heart felt not, which she had left in the possession of the Tynacrian, whose absence was able to distract her, thinking she should not see him any moze. It is easie for the soule to beleue the euil it is addicted too, for as it liues fearful and in doubt of the desired good, any contrary accident that happens, taketh firme possession of the Louer.

In this conuersation were the vncontrolled Brauorant and the Ladie, when they heard a great noyse like the fighting of many knights, they tooke their way towards it, neuer finding out where it was. For the Magitian Lupercio, had deuised it to conduct the Pagan to the keeping of the maruellous Tower. So lost he the Lady which so extreemly greued him, that he had almost lost his wits: wandring thre dayes vp and downe those woods calling for her, yet could heare no tydings,



## The third Booke of the third Part

till thinking she was shipt to sea, he with his Page Artanio did the like. He arriued at the Tower, where he made his abode to the cost of many flames, sending those that went with him in the shippe, to the land for his necessary prouision. Where for this time we leaue him, till other occasion that wil minister matter inough of his valiantnesse, and the Lady in search of Polliphebo, returning to Esciaunia, for in so long delaie, we mightily haue wronged the Princesse Venus.

### CHAP. IIII.

How the Prince *Claridiano* returned to prison, first discovering himselfe to *Don Eleno*, and what else happened.



From the famous Citie of Xantho, went the two all-admired warriours (most faire Ladies) either enuious of the other, to haue seene the haughtie Chiuallries by their inuincible armes. With ioy they met the Page and Dwarfie, that expected them in the Forrest, discoursing of the Fortitude wherewith they proceeded in the battle, leauing their names in Xantho, consecrated to eternitie.

Of great esteeme (said the Dwarfie) should those knightes prisoners be of, hauing obtained such defence.

Thou sayest well (answered the Greeke) for in the end according to their necessitie, they were succoured with the valour of this knight, to whom the palme of the victorie is due. I wil not agree thereto Say knight (said y Dacian), since the experience you haue this day sholue of your unconquered arme, witnesseeth against any that on my behalfe may be alleaged. But leauing this (alreadie alighted from their horses) it will glad my very soule, to knowe who hath this day inacted so many wonders.

In comparison of yours (said the Greeke) warlike Prince of Dacia, mine are of so small name, that they may boast of nothing more, then to be atchiued by the fauours of your presence, whose imaginatiō, and knowledge that Don Eleno of Dacia went in my defence, made me draw strength from my weaknes, to shew, y at least in something



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

I may resemble to be your kinsman.

And thereupon he did put off his helme, proceeding. I should wrong the Darian Lord, not to tell him who hath this day received such happy ayde. His uncle did straight knowe him, and with a ioyfull voyce embracing him, said. Untill the death shall I complaine mee of this wrong (most excellent Prince of Greecia) in so long delaying the content I should receiue by knowing you. For had I been witting of such deare companie, I had still conceiued more assurance of the victorie. My selfe being armed with that assurance, Heroicke Prince (replied the Greeke) made me reserue till now my discouerie, purposing still from the beginning to do it till the battell ended, of whose good successe I nothing doubted saying you therein: and that you may bee assured by what meanes you haue bound me to your obseruance, know, that the combat was made for my libertie, being called in this countrie the Despairing Knight, whose Princesse taking pittie of my wrong imprisonment, procured meanes to liberate me, and found one difficult y<sup>e</sup>nough, which was, to let me out thzough her garden, and gaue mee this armour, that I disguised, might for my selfe demaund the battell: and since it hath so happened to our content, let vs procure it for that Ladie, by againe presenting my selfe in her handes, your selfe beeing witnesse thereof, for in nothing wronging the beautionous Rosamonde, little is aduentured therein. It is iust (replied the Dacian) bzaue Claridiano, that herein all our friends and kinsfolkes ayde vs: and let vs go, for whosoever stayes, any delay is hurtfull. Let vs away (saide the Greeke) for more then is done resteth to be executed, and in affairs wherein our hands must be inured. For know, that this Ladie (one of the worlds beauties) is inamored of the suspitious knight, who is the Prince of Croatia, that is prisoner, whose amitie made me promise a thing inhumane, reason almost impossible, that maugre all the kingdoms, I would set her in his hands, but now I see fortune hath bzoght it to more facilitie, conducting you hither: and I assure you, that his noblenesse and friendship deserueth any kindnesse: wherto the Dacian spake. It is ynough to effect it (Heroicke Prince) if you haue promised it, for I by losing my life, do accomplish what I am bound to.

With these animating reasons they arrived to the doore where the Ladie expected them, with so great feare seeing they staid so long, that he was a thousand times about to go away.

The



### The third Booke of the third Part

The two haughtie warriours alighted, and the Prince giving his watchword, the ioyfull Lady opened the doore and said: I promise you dispaireing knight, you behaue your selfe so like an ill prisoner, that another time there will be no license to walke forth, hauing made this so long.

He replied, I am so pleasant (excellent Princesse) with this imprisonment, that I wold ere I returned bring company with me, that he might participate of the ioy here enioyed. A greater offence then the committed, deserueth pardon with so good excuse. Conditionally (answered she) that I know who he is, for seeing with what courage he helped the Greeke Prince, makes me suspect he is of that happie Countrey. Claridiano replied. So great is the desire I haue towards your seruice (so ueraigne Venus,) that it was able to bring in my aide, and your seruice no lesse then my deare Lord and Uncle Don Eleno, Prince of Dacia. Who had already put off his Helme, discovering his excellent complexion, intreating the kissing of her white hand. He that hath them so good (said she) is wronged, in not commaunding that honoꝛ of all the Worlde. Now may I liue content, knowing that the protectoꝛs of all necessities abides in my Court: And since in handling my affaires, you make me your euerlasting friend, I know not why I should not openly reueale my secrets to you, though to my cost, for it wil not discontent him who hath placed all felicitie so faithfully to loue. And to this end, it wil be good the Prince of Dacia should goe to the suspicious knights lodging, that he may at large know, what hereaway hath happened. To morrow I wil send him one of my Damzels, to shewe it him. For it behoues the Greeke Prince to returne to prison, leaſt he be miſt.

Whereto the Dacian answered. With whatsoever your soueraigne belovte shall commaund, will I rest most contented. For here now we only wil procure yours, although therein I hazard my life. I hoped no lesse of such a knight (said she) for luch as you in defending I receiue no wrong, ought to shewe they be knights. And hereupon they departed, appointing that with his Page and Dwarfſe, he should go to the groue of Louers, whither they would aduise him by Fausta the next day what shall be done, and surly making the doore fast, she tooke the Greeke Prince by the hand, saying.

I am sozie renowned Prince to haue put you in so many dangers  
in



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

in my behalfe. but I trust in the diuine powers, I shall one day thewe my selfe not vngratefull: he answered. Small is not the wrong I receiue by those words, your soueraigne beautie being assured that if I haue, or shall haue any content, it is onely to procure yours, and beleue me, of little desert is the hazard of my life in so necessarie danger, and so much the more, knowing that in Venus seruice, any perill is a pastime.

He suffer my self to be flattered herein (said she) that my beautie hath obtained so good credit. And because I thinke it is reason you returne to the Tower, heere put off your armour, for these will I keepe with me, to put me in remembrance how much I am indebted to their Master. With such grace she disarmed him, that she disgraced Cynthia in her pride, though then she seemed more faire, then when shee visited Endymion.

Hee tooke his leaue of the Ladie, and going through the Caue, they mounted the staires, where in his chamber hee found his trustie Polifandro, with the discret Fausta, that expected him with some feare of his long tarrying, although they had not grieued had he a little longer staid, for the damzels wittie chat had attracted the Pages affection, and were they wise, they had not deserue the execution of their desires, since so good opportunitie the Greeke had giuen them with his absence.

Galenor doth not expresse it onely, saith: that when the Prince of Croacia went to ayde Greece, and carried Venus and Fausta with him, that she seeing Polifandro there knighted, was contented to bee made a Ladie, a manifest token for any suspected minde to thinke they had contracted it. From thence went the damzell accompanied with Polifandro to Venus chamber, and returned to the Prince, closed the Caue after him, of whom he vnderstood the Dacian was the knight that helpt him.

Who being out of the garden, mounted on his swift Tirio, and alighted in the Forrest he was appoynted, whither he was directed (as one that well knew it) by the dwarffe, that with him and his Page in pleasant chat pass away most part of the night, glad to haue occasion wherein he might helpe his cousin. So the time to take some rest being come, he slept aside from them, and lying along the green grasse with his head on his helme, he slept the greatest part of the night, and taking



### The third Booke of the third Part

taking his shield, straight went towards that place, and comming to a spacious plaine, at the farther end thereof, he could discerne some shepheards that attended their flockes. They were talking of their common-wealth affaires, entermingling them with matters of Loue. The haughtie Dacian arriued, and assuring them from the feare they conceiued by his comming, said. Feare not gentle shepheards, for my comming is not to discontent you, saue onely thzoughly to heare your discourses of amorous cares.

One of them that seemed to command the rest, answered. Wee very much esteeme (sir knight) of the good opinion you haue of the Eclauonian shepheards, and beleue me, there is no reason to conceiue the contrarie, especially of those that feede their flockes in the groue of Louers, for here with most efficacie both Loue manifest his power vnto vs, because true loue should neuer bee wanting, from among these spreading mirtles, on whose leaues and growing barks, is the life of those Louers written, to incourage him that languisheth, seeing what they suffered, whose deathes with their names, named this Groue.

Great occasion gallant shepheards, hath the hearing of this Groue bene (replied the Dacian) to bring me hither from my farre remoted countrie, to knowe the aduenture thereof. The shepheards did rest affected to him, seeing his behaviour: and some more precisely noting him, (hauing that day bene in the Cittie) knew him to bee one of the knights that had with such honour ended the battell, so made answer. To no place (sir knight) could you haue come, to haue more truer information of the thing you desire, then this, for beeing so long since we haue kept our flockes heerein, we haue learned of our elders why this valley is called of the Louers. Whereto the Dacian saide: Why then should I impute it a saue (if it bee no trouble) to relate it me, wherein you shall perpetually binde me? In much more then this (replied the discret shepheard) desire we to content you, for your deeds this day done in Alantho, deserue farre much more. So sat he downe among them, where the shepheard began his storie in this manner. When here arriued the Authoz and builder of this great Cittie, and first King of this countrie, there inhabited on the highest toppe of this mountaine, a people whose quiet and pleasing dwelling through their excellent gouernment and care, brought it to bee the gallantest & most pleasantest Town in althis kingdom. Lord of this soyle was a knight,



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Celio by name, the valiantest and of rarest constitution, then knowne in all the vniuerse, insomuch that he was called the Oracle of his age. He had two brothers, the second named Alcyno, and the third Larcinio, they had a sister yonger then theselues, but elder in beautie, which was such, that fro many places strangers came only to see her perfections, on whom some lost their liues at the very first sight. This Ladie called Laissa, their Parents did consecrate to this Groue, dedicated to Diana, to administer to her rites in companie of her other volwellesses, they brought her there so young, and she so much delighted in that solitude, giuing her selfe solely to hunt, that shee became so exceedingly obliuious of her Parents and kindred, that she procured by all meanes possible to occult her selfe from them, and all humane creatures: it was easie to be done by reason of the thicknesse and intricate passages of the same, which was no little ioy to her, thinking she liued neuer more to be seene of any. This life did she lead till the age of foureteene yeares: for then did her beautie staine the sunnes in his mid-dates pride, whose fame the other Nymphes of the Temple published abroad throughout the spacious world. One day among the rest, as Prince Celio accustomed to recreate himself, descending this way on hunting, he chanced to finde her neare a cleare fountaine that lies behinde this little hill, called the Unfortunate, by reason of that which happened thereat. Where Celio seeing her, and of such admirable beautie, blame him not if hee yielded a thousand soules, (so many if he had) for much more deserued her excellencies and most gracious bzauerie. Hee went towards her, shewing by his alteration what he went for, and how estranged from himselfe he should depart, at the drawing of his attracted eyes from her sight. From her being, rose the solitarie Goddesse discontented, to have met with that knight, who seeing her, disdainig coyneesse, followed to ouertake her, staying her with sighes that proceeded from the middest of his perplered heart: but the free Ladie carelesse of his cares, declared hers, in onely halting her swift running steppes, turning her face, from whom acknowledged her for his Goddesse. Shee could not so far outrunne him, but he at last ouertooke her, and catching holde by her thin flæue, falling on his knees, began thus. Oh sacred Ladie, why should you shew such crueltie against him that must liue onely to loue you, hoping for no longer life then you shal grant, admitting his deuotion: but oh, if you shall ioy to prosecute your strangenesse, let mee not prologue your vengeance on my selfe.



### The third Booke of the third Part

While this dagger is readie to execute your sharpe decreæ, for so you do remaine without displeasure, it will be my pleasure to satisfie your doome with my death.

The crueltie (sir knight) you speake of, should I vse towards my selfe? (replied the disdainfull Laissa) should I regard your prayers, knowing how Capitall the offence is against the chaste Diana, whose Pimphees (of whom I being one) are first afore all other things sworn to the puritie of a single life: and so my selfe ioying in the sweetnesse of so choise a living as that led in solitude, should not then cruelly tyrannize ouer my content, procuring your ease, to lose my libertie? With many currents of pearled teares distilling from his eyes, the amorous Celio answered.

Heuer (sacred Goddesse) did my imagination so much as thinke by louing to worke my content, in any thing to abridge yours: onely I beseech (and this is not to offend you) that though my merits deserue not your sight, nor my selfe be worthe to adore you, I may to nourish my else dying life, make you solely to my selfe, the sole commandresse of my oppressed soule, and that I may repaire to your glorious name, with the tributarie duties of my poore hearts spoyles. Somewhat milder grewe the sister of amorous Celio, for there is no Ladie so cruell and vnthankfull, but reioyces to be beloued, for such vertue doth loue set in the Ladie loued, that onely to deserue the gift to be beloued, shee will loue.

She would haue answered, but the comming of Alcyno the second brother interrupted her, who almost before hee sawe her, rendered his soule vnto her, as a pledge of his true loue. The like sacrifice did the third make of his, that then arrived, which two last seeing their brother, and with that Ladie, ere they knewe how to loue, exprest approved tokens to be iealous. To breake their silence, the third brother said. What good fortune is this, (good brother) to meeete with so gallant a Ladie in so solitarie a place? So haue the heauens appointed it my deare brother (replied Celio.) And being nothing iealous of them, to feare to say his minde, added: that the power of my thoughts being employed on her, my soule may triumph in content to haue found such a Soueraigne. Most worthe is her beautie (saide the second) of the offer of my noble thought, whose reliques may solemnize her brauerie: neither is vnoccupied, for Loue doth occupie them all.



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

And whilest Alcino speaks, Larfinio gluts himselfe with gazing. And if by chance all thre be silent, she by moving the Organs of her spach, kindles the fire that unconsumingly doth burne them. Celio loues, and the mollified Lady looking on him, by the motions of her eye-resplending sunnes, with infinit signes of hopes, doth encourage him to persist in his moued sute: and for his sake, she affects the other two, knowing they were his brethren. She exprest it by her kind words, in answering them.

Such is the condition of loue (most beloteous Ladies, credit me, it is knowne by experience) that any amorous motion how fained so ever, is accepted of the Louer, as a manifest token, that onely he, is he, soly beloued.

In like maner fell it out with the brothers. For as the Lady without straungenesse kindly spake to them, the more to winne Celio to her selfe, either of the others accounted themselves to be especially beloued. The greatest part of the day continued they in pleasing that, intangling themselves in the snares of that deceiuing net, that there with thousand childish toyes did leape from bowe to bowe to insnare these poore Louers in their owne unhappie conceits, vntil the withdrawing time of the recluse Goddesse called her away, which forced the thre brothers to returne vnto their home, purposing euery day to come thither, in quest of whom they loued, yet minding to take their seuerall way. For nothing was sufficient to dissuade the two brothers that they were not beloued, to desist the prosecuting of their intented loues. Sometimes after they spake with the Lady, not knowing nor remembryng she was their sister: but she by all exterior meanes, told the two younger, she could admit none save the elder. Nevertheless, so posselt was loue of the two brothers soules, that in such sort it blinded them, that they would neuer beleene it was as she said, and their owne eyes saue to be most true: for the perfect sincere loue which nourish them, caused them to devise the expedients meanes to end their passionated labors. They found it, and to their lines cost: for passing some moneths in this entertainment, one day, dismall and blacke to this Countrey (since so much calamitie fel on it) Larfinio the yonger brother hastened his coming to seeke his sister, clad all in rich shining armor. He met with her at the unhappie Fontaine (through their lucklesse euents so called) in whose bubbling Current she was washing her faire white Alabaster hands.



### The third Booke of the third Part

hands. His Brother lifted vp the Louer, and nimble leaping from his horse, went straight towards the founte. To receiue him ranue the Ladie, giueing him comming with a louing imbrace, not as to her brother or Louer, but so neare in ally to him whom with heart she tendered, which the Prince attributed not to Celio in fauour, nor his consanguinitie to Larissa, saue to his owne pure loue, which was so great, that he iudged himselfe in respect of deseruer of that courtesie.

But Fortune now alreadie wearie, and angrie the earth should longer containe them, ordained Alcino should see the imbrace, who not knowing his brother by reason he was armed, set spurres to his horse being also in armes. The Louer closed his Elizee seeing the other come in that manner, and mounting on his horse, stept to him, saying. What seekes you in such haste sir knight?

Onely (replied the second brother) to let you know the little reason you had to offer violence vnto that Ladie.

Anraged, as well indeed he might, became the vnswary youth, and not supposing he was his brother, turned about his Courser, and saide. Why then staie bolde knight, for this shall chastise thy rude rash intention. Alcino couched his Lance, making their encounters with as much noyse, as if two shippes had met. Of mightie forces were the youtnes, and so they prosecuted their battle with as much strength as crueltie, that the Ladie which beheld them, could not but pittie the blowes which Larissio receiued with some teares: for the loue she bore his brother, forced her to shead them.

The second brother closed with Larissio, striking away at one stroke the helpe of his shield, wounding him sorely on the arme, which was occasiō they cast eithers armes about the other, with such power, that both fell from their Saddles to the ground. Striuing, vp and downe they tumbled on the grasse, besprinkling the earth with their blood.

When the haughtie Celio arriued, who seeing the battle, not perceiuing the Ladie there, leapt from his horse, and drawing forth his sword, went towards them and said. In courtesie sir knights, cease a while your fights, which causelesse seemes to be so fierce. Either was so flesht against the other, thinking the Lady offended by eithers action, that vnwilling to obey their elder brother, (that being also in rich habillements of warre was not knowne) Alcino made reply.



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

Do not you sir knight seeke to part our Combat, whose cause we haue adiudged too sufficient.

Notwithstanding (said Celio) for my sake and intreatie, I hope you will leaue it. It will be then (answered the youngest) to make you confesse you are discourteous, in wishing peace where none is desired. And so he being got betwene them, and they both angred together, they discharged two such blowes vpon him, that he repented to haue undertaken that demaund: but being of incomparable strength, quickly settled himselfe among them, beginning one of the fiercest fights in the world. Aboue two houres they continued hacking, and without pittie cruelly cutting their armes and fleshe, that euery one had aboue eight wounds.

The Ladie feared some unhappie chaunce, whose heart was so deliberated with feare to see Larfinio so wounded (for the others shee knew not) that she could not rise, nor with her voyce giue notice shee was there: so we gaue occasion vnto the lamentablest and most vnluckie act that euer was acted. For Celio weary of so long delay, defending himselfe of the second brother, with a cruell thrust to his thinking bereaft poore Larfinio of his life, whose death so extreemly grieved Alcino, (as if he had knowne him) that despairing of life, did cast his shield to the ground, and closed with his brother, who doing the like, so long wassled, that both fell to the earth, where drawing forth their daggers, with equall blowes either stabbed in the others bodie together at once, losing their vitall breathing, to the Ladies so great sorrow, that she thought to burst.

She rose, bewayling that accursed happe, and went to Larfinio, tooke off his Helme, and seeing him like one dead, she became more then dead. Speedes would shee know the others, which was cause of greater euil, for their Helmes being off and knowne who they were, a thousande lamentations did shee breathe into the aire, bawling her misfortune.

Shee fell in a traunce, and so wise or thise lost the motion of her mouing powers, and at length reconering her selfe, and seeing the three Princes, for her sake with such remorselesse sauadgenesse slaine, tearing the golden tramels of her amber haire, whose belwte eclipsed Appollos light, thus she began her lament.



### The third Booke of the third Part

Oh cruel heavens, wherein haue I deserued this mortal plague?  
Oh how haue I offended, you should so much maligne my hopes, to ap-  
pose your happie influences with such dire euent, against the springing  
of my ioyes: Had you suffered me to keepe my life within the limits of  
my solitary walks, these Princes had not seene me, and so not biewing  
my ill bestowed bewtie, they had not desired what sely was due to one.  
Oh deare Princes, you should haue bene contented to see your brother  
beloued, and your selues for his sake affected, to desist the procurement  
of your pleasure, with his, and your owne deaths. Oh chaste Goddess,  
why didst thou suffer so execrable a fact, hatefull, abhorred and detesta-  
ble were my life vnto the world, should I desire to liue, that saue the  
timelie end of your vnrype yeares. For this, oh this vaine momentary  
fading bewtie! How, oh how may she (valiant Princes) recompence  
this deed, this deare and amorous deed, but to immitate you in death,  
that did Idolatrise me in life: Reason had Tysbe to suffer for her Lo-  
uer, and Hero, rather to taste of the bitter waters of death, then of the  
actiue fire of loue, that in her entrailes burned. None had such reason to  
die as I: and in speaking it, to prolong my despised life, I doe offend:  
which though I might, I will not enioy, in absence of those thre that  
did so dearly loue me. Thre liues wold I haue heroike Princes, to be-  
stow on either one, being debter vnto you for thre, but since I cannot,  
to thee sweete Celio, my soule and heart I doe bequeath: my good will  
and affection to Alcyno and Larinio, and my poore chaste life, with my  
immaculate and vnspotted thoughts, to thee most sacred Goddess do I  
I sacrifice, in extenuation of my fault. Whereupon with mortall fury  
she drew Celios sword, and setting her brest to the sharpe point, she of-  
fered her life to deaths triumphing spoiles. Which no sooner was ef-  
fected, but the blew heavens with thicke fogs and mysts was clouded,  
with thundring and lightning, and innumerable horrible voyces, that  
stroke deadly terro in the harmelesse people, who with their flocks  
and herds of cattle, perished. Their bodies were neuer found, nor it  
is not knowne what is become of them, more then that their liues and  
deaths, with the manner and occasion, was found carued in caracters  
vpon some Dkes there adioyning, where some shepheards haue often  
seene a Caue, from whence issues such flames and smoake, that it con-  
sumed the Trees neare to it, and it is many yeares, since none dares  
through feare let their flocks feed thereabouts.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

This is (sir knight) what you haue demaunded, and of so many reports the truest: where the shepheard ended. Naturally was the Prince couragious and desirous of such aduentures, and so very earnest did he inquire for the Cae, determining to enter and see what it contained.

The shepheards shewed it him moze to content him, then to thinke he would aduenture to descend thither. But being hard by it, with invincible courage (in the end like Don Eleno) hee tolde them his will. They sorrowed thereat, & with no few teares they sought to dissuade him from it, yet nothing could put him from his purpose, respecting neither theirs, Fabios, nor his dwarffes intreaties: but drawing forth his sword, and taking his inchaunted shielde, hee recommended himselfe to his heavenly Protector, and them to expect his returne, and so directed his steppes towards the infernell Cae, where what happened him, the next recounteth.

### CHAP. V.

How *Don Elena* proved the aduenture of the Louers, and what end he gaue it. And how in *Xantho* he made a challenge about the two Princes liberties.



With Brutus sword in hand, and his new inchaunted shielde, with maiestick steps marching towards the timorous caue, (most kind Ladie) left we the Dacian Prince, with whom neither the intreaties of his Pages nor shepheardes, prevailed to giue over his commenced enterpryse: neither the necessitie wherein he knew he had left his deare Cousin Claridiano, & the beautilous Venus, with the Prince of Croacia, for his desire to knowe what that feareful caue contained, made him dispence with all these, and drowne the memoize of his owne affaires in the center of obliuion.

So with Herculian courage committing his safetie to the powers diuine, he beganne to enter the terroz-breeding Cae, that rather seemed an infernall descent vnto the hellish bowtes, so much, and so furious was the fire that thither welcommed him: from vnto burning by those



## The third Part of the third Booke

those consuming flames did despairing Bonus inchaunted armor defend him: yet neuertheless felt he the greatest paine in all his life: for besides innumerable number of horrible voyces that sounded within that hollownesse, many thousand hideous deformed shapes and apparitions opposed themselves against him, with Steele mases hammering on his bodie, with such felicitie, that sometimes his handes, then his knees, and sometimes both, he was forced to sit on the ground: in so much that his own blows wherewith he strook the emptie aire, serued to no other purpose, but with the fruitlesse exercise to wearie his arme, that he could not feele it. In this vneuen warre labored he about an houre, minding many times to retorne backe, so exterie hot was the fier, but surprised with consideration of whom hee was, and what ignominious infamie awaited such an act, with which striving hee obtained the ende of the burning Caue, where he met with a great Piller, which nothing displeased him, that by getting behinde it, might defend him from his pursuers. But here was he in the greatest danger of all his life time, for the Piller he embraced, became a most fearefull Gyant, who so strongly prest him, that he thrust his armor within his flesh, and the flames being no lesse, that from him proceeded, then those he indured thitherward.

Hee strongly stayed himselfe, remembzing whom hee had to doe with, and casting his mightie armes about him, turned him vp and downe as if hee had bene some common knight, till angered that so long that wast had lasted, hee hoysed him from the ground, and with the utmost of his strength ranle him against the wall, that terminated the Cave. Scarce had he done it, when vanishing, in his place he left a doore, through which with vnccontrolled minde he entred, comming into a fresh delightfull greene, with such different varietie of trees in such artificiall order set, that the sight eased him of his past toyle. At one end thereof he sawe a sumptuous building, seeming not by humane hands erected, for the top raised like to a Pyramide, seemed to checke the cloudes in height, and as the same reuerberated on the glittering stones, the great splendor thereof dazzled the beholders eyes. At the entrance thereof stood three pines, to support so many Arches, under which lay three knights, which seemed to defend the entrie. The one and biggest in constitution of bodie, was cladde in Indian colour at  
mour,



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

monr, with many Lillies grauen there upon. And on his shielde, that hung at the tree, was figured the portrature of Faith, with this word.

On earth if any honour bee,  
All tride honour comes by mee.

The other two were alike in skie colour armes, full of strawberries, and on their shields Enuie pictured with many eyes, as the Assirians used to paint her, the inscription thus.

Enuies seruants thousands are,

All which mischiefes do deuise:

Then to looke on each ones care,

Enuie must haue many eyes.

All three shewed themselves to be of valour, which made the Dacian Lord imagine (as indeed they were) Laissas brothers. Before the Arches there was made a horse race, at the beginning whereof, hung a Table with these words, whose meaning Don Eleno read thus.

In the time to come, when the most happiest in Loue, and with whom Fortune hath shewed her selfe most fauourable, shall here arrive, then this aduenture of the Louers shall haue ende: and also the torments that *Laissa* suffers: for so hath *Nycosiano* the great Magician of the Greene valley ordered.

Plainly did the Dacian perceiue, that the Table spake by him, since through so many misfortunes he had arrived to so happie a Haucn, as the inioying of his beaution *Rosamonde*. With gallant Maistie he entred the race, being confronted by the younger of the three brothers. The rest seeing the warre offered them, mounted on their Coursers preparing for it, as they which had no more iudgement, but for that, Judge of the battell needs would Cupid be, the mightie K. of Sowles and Hartes, sitting in all royaltie on a Imperiall throne, for worke-  
manship stupendious, shewing himselfe (his eyes not blinded) with irefull aspect. At his feet lay prostrated all those that had rebelled against his decree.



### The third Part of the third Booke

But they which had maintained his statutes, and obserued his lawes, and with vaine Idolatrie adored his rights, sate round about in royall chaires, euerie one in his degree, according to the supremacie of his deserts: and with most care of obedience acknowledging his scoltie, repairing to him with the due tribute of his soule, as to their true sworne Prince.

The signall of the fight was giuen with so many thousandes of militarie instruments, as if heauen and earth should meeete. Whereat swifter then an agyle thought, the warrelike warrior prickt against Larfinio, incountring him with such strength, that he forced him lose his stirropes and bziole, & had almost ouerthrowne him from his saddle. With braue gallantnesse past the Dacian forwards, turning vpon his aduersarie with his naked sword in his hand, but scant had he done so, when quicker then the winde, the second brother spurde against him, running at his backe with such force, that had he not held by his horse necke, he had kist the ground.

He had not done executing this blow, when like a thunderbolte the mightie Celio departed to him, meeting him (after the breaking of his launce) so forcibly with his horses breast, that both tumbled to the ground. On his feete fell the Dacian, amazed at the knights deuise: who gaue him no longer time for this consideration, for the two that on horsebacke remained, returned to ouerthrow him. Hee could not defend himself, for the course was short, and so headlong they ouerturned him. Ere he could rise, Celio slept to him, with the greatest blow he had in al his life receiued, for it had almost stroke him sencelesse, laying him all along vpon the earth.

All this was no meanes to put the Dacian from his skilfull proceeding, for ere he could second another, like a furious Lyon he rose on his feet, resolved to expect them. Hee saue himselfe in daunger of death, for the two that remained on horsebacke, (with quicke and suddaine carriers) so oppressed him, as he lost his hope, with honour to issue out of that enterprise.

Among the horses he settled himselfe strongly. A thing worthe his valour he did, for his shield forwards, he expected Larfinio, that to encounter him had aduanced himselfe, but no more he moued him, then if he had runne against a rock, whom with his horse staggering back, the Dacian forced to fall, whereat the Prince was glad, knowing that



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

that on foote he could better deale with them. So he stept aside, letting Alcino passe, and as he went, gaue him such a thrust, which was it that assured him the victorie, making him therewith, maugre his strength, to leaue his saddle. For all this he had no cause to boast of the blowe: for the enraged Celio ranne to him with both hands laying on his rich helme, the temper gaue him his life, else had his head downe to his necke bene diuided, yet made he the blood in great abundance gush through his nose.

By this were the other two vp with their swords in hand. It was a combat most wortheie Cupids fight, for the three are mightie, and the Dacian the same he was wont, and a foote stronger then Mars, hee shewed himselfe like a cunning fencer, setting forth at length his shield and sword, to intice them to make offer. Herein hee preuailed, for most blowes he receiued on his shield, which being impenetrable, they did not so much as rase it.

In this manner a while he behaued himselfe, but hee iudged it cowardise so to end the battell: wherefore brauely he rusht among them, well couering himselfe with his shield, and as hee past, he gaue the second brother such a counterbuffle on the helme, striking away a great part of his vizor, that it was aduenture he had not done so by his head.

Downe along the breast descended the sword, making there a long dangerous wound, with another he would haue ended that battell, had the other two let him. But the haughtie Celio with impoysoned rage entred so much inwards, that at his pleasure hee could discharge his furie on the toppe of the inchaunted shield, not able to cut it, yet so waightie was the blow, that three or foure steppes staggering backwards, it forced him.

Larsinio was not ydle, for with a strong point he thrust at his breast. He felt the blow, for it depriued him of his breaths passage. The two brothers had not discharged their blowes, when the wounded Alcino returned, and with both hands gaue him a most mightie stroke. Resound with Echo did the greene fields, by the warriors sterne stupendious blowes. And the angrie Judge was astonished to see with what crueltie they assailed each other.

Aduantage had the warrelike Dacian in his armour, for though he was tired, yet they had no scarre. Otherwise was it with the brothers, for the fiede was besprinkled with their blood. Don Elenos celeritie



### The third Booke of the third Part

He much auailed him, else he had not got the victorie so cheape, but it and the surenesse of his armes, makes it certaine. Thre houres haue they fought, making no shewe of fainting, in the end of which, was the Dacian already at the extreamest of his rage, thinking he had y<sup>e</sup> worst of the fight, so casting his shield at his backe, and with his sword twixt both hands, began to brandish it among them, quicker then the Cyclopians doe their crooked hammers, and as he could not misse them, he gaue no blowe but fetcht blood. In the selfe same Coyne doe they paie him: for the thre more fiercer then Alcydes, assayled him so brauely, that if he giues, he receiues, and in greater quantitie, with equall qualitie. Now skill and dexteritie preuailes not with him, all he remits to blowes, wherewith he rents, cuts, and in peeces shiuers their armour, priuy coates and shields.

He would first dispatch Celio which most troubled him, so getting from the two, entered to him, and in his assault, with a downright blowe he cut away his shield, with al his banbrace, and a great peece of his shoulder. Scarce had he done it, whē with a point he turned against the second, thrusting thre parts of his sword vnder his arme pit, where had he put forth his arme as he mought, for euer had he there laine. Upon Larinos waste he discharged his furie so fiercely, that it was a wonder he had not in two diuided him. The heauens preserved him to paie his iealousie, although against the Dacian Prince he lost thereby. In his very soule was Celio vext, to see with what rygor that one knight handled them, that taking his sword strongly in his fist, ayined aloft, giuing Alcyno time to giue him a dangerous blow on the thigh: for falling betwene a ioynt, it made him a wound outwards: so great was the paine, as he could not stand on that legge, which the brothers perceiuing, and assuring themselues the victorie, began to oppresse him so vehemently, as they depriued him of breathing. Eager herein seemed the third brother, and would make some shewe of his valour, but it resulted to his deare cost. For Don Eleno noting his intent, gaue back, as fearing the rest, and so let y<sup>e</sup> third enter: who being within his reach, with incredible force laide him on the head, he cut away most of his Helme, with a great peece of his head, tumbling him at his feete, helping him thereto, with another no lesse strong. The other two closed with him, lamenting the successe. He could not refuse the wraile. He entred thereto aduisedly, first drawing forth his dagger,



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

dagger, quickly they fell on the ground, where they tumbled a good while. It was aduantage for the Dacian to be so, for stretching forth his arme in that place where before Aleyno was wounded on y front, there againe Don Eleno strooke him, making him lose his hold, with the pangs of death. When he turned on the first, whom for his valour he had affected, but at that instant forgetting it, let flie at his brest a most cruell flabbe, wherewith he ended the brauest aduenture euer in that kingdome knowne. The noyse which the haughtie edefice made, vanishing away, was heard thzough all the Citie of Xantho. To Cupids Throne was the Ladie conueyed, in that manner, as she witnessed her brothers deaths: whom the God of loue thanked for her amorous act, in giuing her selfe the mortall stroke of death, only moued thzough zealous loue, for which hee promised her felicitie in her amours.

Against the two brothers that were causers of that vnhappy euent, was the sentence read to this effect. To the purgatorie of Jealousie and Enuie let them be carried, where they may purge the paine that their rash vnadvised proceedings did put the famous Celio in. Whom the mightie Judge commaunded to be sent vnto the house of Hope, where he might liue in ioy, and sure he should obtaine a glorious and amorous ende, deserued by his faith, and that the remembrance of louing his sister, should not annoy him.

This being done in presence of the Dacian, who vnable to stirre, with many flashes of lightning, the heauens were somewhat darkened, till all was past, he founde himselfe in the open field, hard by the bewteous Layssa, and before them a Pillar of fire, with these words which Don Eleno did read in this maner.

The Purgatory of Enuiers shall here remaine, iustly punishing the two Louers: til the sonne of the cruell Lyonessle shall give them libertie: Discouering also the Castle of Hope: whose wonders shall not be by any scene, till the foure most fiercest Lyonesses shal meet at this Fount.



### The third Booke of the third Part

So greatly desired the Prince to see the scrole, that hee sawe not the Ladie, till turning about, hee spied her come towarde him a pace, already assured of the true manner of this successe, and how she was sister to the dead: yet knowing they remained but inchaunted, ioyfully going neare him, said. I knowe not (most soueraigne knight) how I may satisfie the dutie you haue bound me too, in hazarding your life for me in so manifest a perill: although so braue a deed as this, brings with it his due recompence.

It is sufficient (excellent Ladie) answered the Prince, that it bee knowne, I did you therein some seruice, which bound all the world (seeing what wrong you indured, being kept heere) to procure the remedie. The coming of the Shepheards, Squire and Dwarf, intercepted their farther speech. Euerie one did their dutie to the Prince and Ladie. Whom Don Eleno receiued, as if he had not in a long time seene them.

At this time entred the same an infinit number of knights, accompanying the king and the Prince Lindauero, that galloped amaine to know the newes. The Shepheards aduanced themselves, for reward of the newes, saying: that the russet knight which had ended the battel in the Cittie, had terminated the Louers-adventure. It greatly gladdened euery one for Laissas disinchantment: though being done by Don Eleno, it nothing pleased the king, that in his heart did hate him. By this approached the Dacian on his mightie Tyrio, bringing the Lady behinde him, so faire, that she affected euery one, and had not Lindauero bozne so great good will towards Venus, doubtlesse he had elected her his Goddesse.

The King entertained him with better exterior shewe, then inward minde, thanking him for the good he had done in his kingdome. The Dacian would not (after hee had replied with his becomming dutie) treat of any thing touching the prisoners liberties, but rather deuised other matter of discourse, till they all fixed their eyes on a gallant knight, that descended downe the valley so well armed, that it delighted euery one. None there but gazed on him, and the Ladie with some what more earnestnesse: and with affection beganne to commend his brauerie. He was mounted on a mightie Rone Courser, his armor of a Tawnie, garnished with many greene flowers, which brauely became him. His shield about his arme, in midst whereof was a knight



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

knight lying along, laying forth his breasts to Cupid, that with a dart angerly seemed to threaten him with this Motto.

Strike home, the Gods will sure his woorth commend,  
Who spoyles a wretch, that wants meanes to defend.

His launce he carried in his hand, and with such heroicke grace, that excepting the knights which ended the battell, they had not seene any of better disposition. Approaching and doing his dutie to the king, he straight knew Don Eleno by his deuise, which not a little pleased him to meete him in those partes, for he himself was the mightie Brandiniano, Prince of Babilon, Florions Nephew, and sonne to Brandizel, and hee that in Grecia was chosen for the third chalenger of the Imperiall Iousts, and going with his father to Babilon, was separated from him by a tempest. The youth was not in loue, but came in the last condition of being, for turning about and looking on that Ladie, in recompence of his sight, hee gaue her both heart and soule, and yet complained of himselfe to haue giuen her no more, iudging her beautie to deserue farre more.

The king demaunded who he was, ioying that such a knight should arriue at his Court. But he excused himselfe the best hee could, imagining that his discoverie might displease the Dacian. The king would not seeme to importune him ouer much therein, so turning about, returned with all his traine to the Cittie. It was already knowne in euerie place wh it had happened, & Venus had aduertised the Greeke thereof, who was exceeding glad of his Uncles aduenture. All the popularitie entertained the Dacian with loude salutations of immortall praises, saying: Long liue the knight that hath so honoured our land. It so bert Lindauro, that a thousand times he was about to command them to silence, but he dissembled it to conceale his euill intent. So neare went the new Persian Louer to Laissa, that all full of affection, he took occasion to speake thus. With reason may your soueraigne beautie complaine of all knights, for being so remisse in procuring your libertie, that they might lose theirs. The Ladie well vnderstood him, for shee was skilfull in the Art of Loue, and now againe beginning therein, plainly coniectured the end, so replying to the purpose, saide. Of my selfe may I most lament (sir knight) to be bozne with such lacks



### The third Booke of the third Part

of fortune, that I rather attribute my long imprisonment to it, then to the fault of straunger knight, for being ended by this knight, that was the first which proued it, it might haue happened so to any other, wherefore I am solely grieued with mine owne misfortune: and sorry would I be, that my libertie should cause such losse as you speake of, for I would haue none complaine of wrong by me. They arriued at the Pallace, where the beautilous Laisa lighted in the armes of the Prince of Babylon, being led by the aydes of Don Eleno and Bransiano, which content not a little increased her beautie. More fairer then the sunne in May Venus expected her comming. They embraced one another with that kindnesse that befitted their estates, whereupon the Princesse said.

I knowe not soueraigne Lady, to whom this Court shall be hereafter most bound vnto, whether to this knight, that with his valour hath so honoured it, liberating you from so iniust prison, or to your excellencie, that so hath beautified it. The Dacian replying said. Most beauteous Princesse, bee assured that whilst you liue, there will want none that shall bee in your debt, lesse then with his life, since you attribute to me, what onely is due with such right to this Ladies beautie, in whose deliuerance the ending of this aduenture was nothing. Ready to burst with anger stood Lindauero, seeing with what kindnesse Venus spake to that knight, which made him suspect his ending the aduenture, and what he had done in the place, had moued her to affection. He could no longer indure it, but called him, saying. Come (Sir Knight) and relate vnto the King what befell you with the Louers, for we shall all reioyce to heare it.

From the Ladies he went, leauing the Persian with them, betwix whom they admitted him: for which place, Phoebus had exchanged his throne celestially. Venus while Don Eleno discoursed with the kings, demaunded of him in this manner.

Sir knight, quietly and without grudge, if you will enioy so great a fauour as this, you must tell vs your name, raising your beauer, and this small satisfaction shall satisfie so high a benefit? The Persian replied. I had ere this done it (sacred Princesse) without demaunde, but I feared to displease thereby the knight in russet: for although he hath not knowne me, I could not haue met with better hap then him in this countrie, and if he bee here knowne, I will declare my name.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

elle I beseech your excellencie, do not commaund it me. I onely am she (of all this kingdome containes, said Venus) that knowes him, and he not a little ioyed, discovered himselfe to me: and so without feare may you tell me yours, for this Ladie and my selfe excepted, none shall ever knowe it.

To satisfie your content (excellent Ladie answered he) Ie no longer conceale it, I am Bransiniano, Prince of Babylon and Persia, the greatest friend the Greekes haue, by reason my father was brought vp in company of the Emperour Alphebo, and I in Claridianos, in whose demaund I wander, & as this knight is his so neare kinsman, I cannot but affect him: and had I not this reason, yet his valour bindes me to his loue: and raising his vizor, shewed his faire face, saying. Because you shall be assured (diuine Ladies) how much I desire your seruice, I haue discovered all that of my selfe I can.

I do highly esteeme (braue Prince replied Venus) the account you haue giuen me of your stocke, and because I will not long be your debto: for the same, I will giue you newes of that Greeke you seeke, who in this Pallace is prisoner, vnknowne to any what he is, saue to the Prince of Dacia and me, who shall at large acquaint you with the cause, which is not lawfull any other should know: and so I intreate your soueraigne beautie, my deare Laissa, to conceale it. So eleuated in contemplations of her new amorous thoughts, was the Lady, that neither it, nor what else was talked of, did she marke, for of none did euer loue with moze power take possession, willingly making her submit, seeing how great a Prince he was.

She replied not to the purpose, saying. I greatly desire (excellent Princeesse) that since your knight hath recounted to them their demaundes, he doo it heere to vs. Venus knew not to what end shee so replied, but being wittie, quickly conceiued what might be the reason, so dissembling it, said. There is no reason but we should bee satisfied herein. So calling their Damzell Fausta, sent her in their behalfe to Don Eleno. But they could not end to giue her her charge, by reason of a suddaine tumult that arose where the king was. The Persian hearing it, stood vp, and closing his beuer, taking leaue of the Ladies, went towards the Dacian, at what time somewhat moued, hee thus beganne,



### The third Booke of the third Part

Gladly (most mightie king of Eſclauonia) would I haue deferre vntill ſome other occaſion, what I will now ſay, becauſe I would not diſturbe this preſent ioy. But ſo great is the neceſſitie I haue to depart, that it forceth me to beſeech thee, in reſpect of the iuſtice thou haſte alwaies maintained, thou wouldeſt be pleaſed to giue me the priſoners, whole libertie coſt me ſo much blood, and my companion much more, whole words haue not ſuffered him to come with me, although he requeſted me I ſhould on his behalfe, intreate ſo much of his Maieſtie, ſince as it ſeemed you reſted content, wee ſhould about their diſcharge vndertake the battell. Conſider it well, and anſwere me ſtraight, for I will immediately depart, publiſhing the iniuſtice I haue in thy Court receiued, through all the world. Here he ended, doing his dutie. Well (ſaid the king) he had reaſon, but he was ſo ſubborned by the Prince Lindauero, that to pleaſe him, he choſe rather to reiect it, anſwering: I know (braue knight) you haue reaſon to demaunde theſe priſoners, but ſeeing they ſlew ſuch great Princes, whole kindred crying out for iuſtice, forceth me to detaine them. To this ſaide Lindaura, your Maieſtie doth wrong your royall Crowne and ſeat, by ſo many waies, and in ſo many reſpects, to giue this knight ſo many ſatiſſactions of what with great right and iuſtice is done. Theſe words ſo incraged the Dacian, that hee was almoſt reſolued to ſtrike him, but hee ſtaied himſelfe, not willing to raiſe the whole Hall vpon him, ſo hee replied.

It better would beſeem thee Prince of Siconia to make known thy valour, defending thy owne iuſtice with thy proper perſon, by honourable meanes, and not by ſo infamous a manner. And that thou maiſt know what wrong is done me, I here alone challenge the fight againſt two knights, whom thou ſhalt appoynt about this matter, or if thou wilt like a good knight accept my gage, I deſie thee, perſon to perſon, giuing thee aduantage for the combat, (that thou mayeſt ſee and know my iuſtice) I will combat on ſote in armour, without weapons, as ſword, dagger, and launce, and thou ſhalt take the ſelde, and haue thy choiſe in armes.

So great was the aduantage, that it was able to turne a tender Lambe vnto a fierce Lyon, and not regarding his honour, hee did accept it preſently, from which the king could not diſſwade him. None in the Hall, except the Babylonian Prince, but iudged the knights challenge to proceed of more madneſſe.

Don



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

Don Eleno as he had done nothing, demaunded the battell to be straight, first requiring the prisoners to be brought in field. Who were straight aduertised thereof. The Greeke was nothing astonished thereat, well knowing the fury of his vnkle. The prisoners surely guarded, were conducted to a Scaffold of purpose made for such matters. They greeted one another as their affection did deserue, with ioy, hoping for the good successe of the battel. For Pollidolpho knowing the Challenger, doubted not of victory. On foote did the Dacian enter the feldes without any weapon: which the Prince of Persia carried, and his page ledde his horse to giue it. The Combat ended, with a leape did the furious gallant take the Lists, compassing it about with such quicke paces, as he were mounted. Then stood he still, gladly gazing how the Citie did vnpeople it selfe to see the Combat.

The Ladies with their bewties made that place a Paradise, although Venus & Layssa feared, seeing the Prince in so doubtfull a fight. Without any such thought expected he the comming of his enemies, whose entrance, the next capitulateth.

### CHAP. VI.

The battle that past betwene the two Princes, with the end thereof. The Prisoners liberties, and what happened.



I at any time (swarte Ladies, wonders of this times bewtie) my Prince and Don Eleno, had need of your fauours, this it is, for I without shall be forced abruptly here to stoppe, and he thinking that it failes him, no maruell if he feare his aduersary, that at one end of the place appeared, as wel furnished with armes & weapons, as with pride, mounted on a mightie white Courser, his Armoz was greene, with many harts all incompassed with flames of fire. In midst of his shield were two Harts enchayned, with this word.

Both are due to her varitie,  
For modest grace, and chiefeft bewtie.



### The third Booke of the third Part

Of gallant cōstitution seemed the Pagan, with the great companies that accompanied him, euerie one assured of his conquest, seeing him with such aduantage: besides, reputing him of forces inuincible. They equalled the summe betwene them, an auncient martiall custome in warres of that qualitie. Oh Don Eleno, who might see thee on foot without weapons, fearelesse awaight the comming of thy valiant aduersarie, who at the fearefull trumpets sound prickt forth, making the earth with hoarse noise eccho the trampling of his horses hooves. The Dacian stayed for him couragiously, onely fearing the incounter in the closing of the horse. Leaping aside, he made him lose the blow, and with such furie passe forth his carrier, that his shield had almost leapt out of the lists. Twise was he so serued, but the third he changed of purpose, for brandishing with mightie force the lance with such seleritie, he cast it at him, that his was not sufficient to make him shun the receiving it vpon his amorous brest, it could not pearce it, so that onely Loue had done, so making him a little stagger backe, while it rebounded backe. Oh admirable act, in the end worthe the Dacian Lord: for with more furie taketh not the towzing Eagle her flight after her pray, then doth Don Eleno follow the retorted lance, he took it in the ayre, and turned merely vpon the Pagan, at him hee let it flie with more horroz, then had it been sent thzough a canons mouth. Against his strength there is no defence, for it plainly pearced his shield, & wounding him very dangerously below the nauell, with a mightie fall hee made him measure his length on the earth, with such astonishment of the beholders, that they knew not what meanes to finde to praise the knights valour. The lance was broken in two, which did not a little content the Prince, he took it vp quicker then the rauenous kite snatcheth the tender chicke. By this came Lindauro, with his shielde and sword in hand, thinking quickly to ende the fight, and with a flourish would haue strooke the Dacian, entring with a thrust: As sure of his armes as of his strength was the Prince, so standing fast on his fete, suffered him to enter. Great was the blowe he received, but hee with the trunchion in hand gaue him one, that set all former ones in obliuion, for bringing the lances peece right ouer his head vpon the helme, discharged it so puissantly, that voyding infinit blood thzough his nostrils and mouth, he tumbled him headlong to the ground. Suddainly he arose, for it was no time of delaies.

But



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

But he was met wit an other, that almost had againe feld him. Nevertheless would not the Pagan doubt the victorie, and drawing strength from weaknesse, let flie at the toppe of the Dacians helme, it turned his an one side more then he wisht. Enter he wold with another, but ere he could sway his sword about, the Prince made him feele the forcible waight of his trunchion, therewith making his shield and head meete, that it stopt the passage of his breath. Close he would with him, but the Pagan brauely set his sword in the middle, with the poynt against him, and thrust him away so strongly, that he was forced backe three or foure steppes.

He followed him with a blowe on the helme, which put the Dacian to some paine, but all redowned to the Pagans harme, for Don Eleno being now extreemly incensed, aboyded another, and closed with him, casting his strong arme about his necke. A while continued they wassling, but in the end, with a grone the Dacian laide him on the ground vpon his backe. On his breast he set his knees, saying. Dead art thou Prince Lindauro, vnlesse thou doest vnsay what thou haste said, commaunding the prisoners to bee brought hither and set at libertie, with their horses, armes, and weapons, since against all lawe and iustice they haue been so long detained. All is ended with my vanquishment (replied the afflicted Saracin.)

The Dacian intreated the Iudges to come and take the Pagans confession, who sent vnto the King to liberate the knights, with all that was theirs, since his fortune was so aduersse against him. Their horses and armes being brought in presence of them all, they were armed. Where with great kindnes the Persian offred his loue to the Greeke, for as great amitie grew betweene them, as euer was among their fathers.

Claridiano receined him, saying. I was assured (gallant Prince) I could not I should not receiue any good without your presence: my good will deserues it, for in all things it shall procure your content. Whereto he answered. Great is that I receiue (heroicke Prince) to haue found the time wherein I might enioy your sight, and far greater should I haue conceined, had I taken part of the troubles I was toloe you indured: although where this happie Prince hath imployed his power, my little indenuoz were but needlelesse.



### The third Booke of the third Part

I acknowledge my selfe so bound vnto you al (replied Claridiano) that I will protest no more, saue that you in desire, and this Prince in doing, haue accomplisht the dutie of your valours, and fulfilled my expectation.

But let vs now go to take our leaues of this peruerse malicious people, on whom I bow ere I depart from Esclauonia, to be fully reuenged at my pleasure, and their dammage. All foure that were the flower of armes, went together to the window, where the king was, to whom that euerie one might heare, the suspitious knight, spake thus. I am very sorry (king of Esclauonia) in thy Court to haue seene so many tumultuous bzailes, where had you obserued and vntwonged kept euery ones iustice, according to the same that soz so iust a king doth so blazon you, to be throughout the spacious territories of the woordes wide regions, they had not proceeded so farre south, although these knights and my selfe may truely say, that if we displeased thee, thou haste at pleasure satisfied thy selfe, to the deare cost of our quiet, putting in daunger the liues of such knights, a thing that the very hearing doth offend, how much the more hauing taken so vniust reuenge, guiding thy selfe thereto by a blinde selfe voluntarie passion, and not by royal, wise, and discret reason.

And least thou shouldest hereafter pretend ignorance, knowe thou haste iniuried such Princes, that will straightly call thee to strickt account of all these wrongs. Of whence, or what you be, and of your pride and insolencie, we neede not care to know, (said the king) for it manifestly appeares in your last committed faults. And that you may see how little I respect your haughtie menaces, I commaund you on paine of death, to depart my kingdome within these foure daies, if not, Ile seek, & till the death pursue you with an hoste of armed men. Before this had wee determined our departure (replied Pollidolpho) abhorring longer to abide in Court, whose king so little doth respect true iustice: and so do I hope to see the time thou shalt thy selfe confesse the euil committed, to be ruled by the opinion of self passionate men, whom fortune hath rewarded according to their malicious intent. Plainly vnderstood Lindaura it was ment by him, but vrgent necessitie was betweene them, that he durst not speake.

They departed from the king, leauing him readie to burst with rage, and Lindaura in the same manner, that had no other comfort, but



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

but to thinke his estate sufficient to warre against the whole world. He required since all matters were quietted, to be married to the Princesse Venus.

The Father could not denie it, being pleased therewith, nor the Lady might not recall her word given to obey him, although she deferred the day, alleadging she and her damzels were working certaine things against that time, which forced her to deferre it eight or tenne daies, for seeing they were assured of her graunt, that terme was little. Her father reioyced, and much more the dishonoured Lover of Liconia, to see that for all his troubles and unhappie chances, he obtained his Venus. Who altogether of a contrary desire, sought meanes how to aduertise the Prince, and to conferre with them of her resolution. The Greeke well knew it, who being without the Cittie, taking some rest at the fountaine, although it was some to be at libertie, and in the company of such friends as those, on whom for their valors a greater matter then that, and difficulter might be reposed: He exprest his determination thus.

So great is my soules ioy (mightie Princes of Dacia and Babylon) that my tongue cannot expresse it, in that it pleased the reuoluing Distresse of vncoustant time, to order your commings hither, for otherwise what the Prince of Grecia promised, without your handes had bene impossible for him to atchiue. Before the king imprisoned mee, my helpe was craued by his daughter, against the force her father would commit, to match her with a husband she disliked, to whom I offered my person, so did this warlike Prince of Croatia, louing (as her beautie doth deserue no lesse) the faire Venus, and of himselfe he made her sole Emperesse. I well perceiend it, presuming more then my strength could beare, promising to set her in his handes, in despight of the Syconian Sophy, to whom she is assured by the king, because hee is so great a Lord. In prison talking with her, and telling her my opinion, she altogether yielded thereto, and that shee would in nothing contradict me. So must I now go to her presence, and resolve her of my intent, that according to our time limited, wee may vse the most conuenientest remedie. I do therefore intreate your aduise and counsell in these waightie affaires: The Dacian thus replied. I knowe none here (excellent Prince, that will deny his ayde vnto so mightie a Lord, as the Prince of Croatia, and therefore there is no reason, but

¶

wee



### The third Part of the third Booke

We all hazard our liues to woozke his content, and mozeouer it be-  
houes me to take from hence the belsteous Laissa, for hauing bought  
her libertie at so deare a rate, I wil not leaue her in a straungers po-  
wer: for I intende to intreate the Prince of Persia to carry her vnto  
his Empire, til I otherwise doe purpose: and the company of so bzaue  
a Lady will be greuous to none. And since we be heere togither, I  
am of opinion that the Prince of Greece goe to night to knowe the  
Ladies resolution, and against when they will bee readie to depart  
thence. Whereto the Croatian Lord thus said.

I cannot most excellent Warriours, and soueraigne Princes,  
protest, nor binde my selfe to more then I haue already, only this, I  
can within two dayes, haue heere twelue thousande men that ex-  
pect my comming to the sea, that til I commaund them the contrary  
wil not depart from thence. And within the Citie I haue fiftie knights  
and two Gyants to helpe vs if we shall neede their aide. And we may  
safely vnseene go to our lodging in the Citie, and there order our bu-  
sinesse.

Euery one was glad that the Prince was so well prouided, and  
lest longer delaie should proue more harmefull, they straight moun-  
ted, and tooke their way backe towards the Citie. They entred vnto  
their lodging vnseene of any, thzough the obscuritie of the night. From  
thence they sent two of the chieftest of the fiftie knights, to poste to the  
Sea side, to commaund the Captaines and Leaders of the souldiers,  
that euery Commander should leade the most and best of their charge  
vnto the Walley of the Louers, and that the rest should be in vigilant  
readinesse, guarding the Gallies. The knights obeyed most willing-  
ly, as they that intirely loued their Prince, being also of his subiects  
so affected.

The Greeke Prince leauing them, onely with his sword and the  
strong priue Coats that Venus gaue him, he left his Chamber, taking  
the next way to the Garden, which was the place he thought to meete  
the Lady at, which indeed was so. For accompanied with Fausta and  
Laissa, whom she had made partaker of her Loues, and also how she  
esteemed the Persian Prince, were both determined to go with them,  
being assured what great Princes they were, if that meanes might de-  
barre that vniust marriage. Claridiano comming to the doore, gaue  
his signall, which Fausta knowing, opened, saying.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

In faith sir knight, I now see you cannot but be happie in your owne Loues, being so carefull of anothers. The Prince thereto answered.

This is my unhappinesse, to see by experience anothers faith well guerdoned, and liue my selfe in the greatest dispaire that euer knight in the world did. It may be (answered said she) you are onely euil conditioned: for by all your other parts, you deserue the wide worlds admiration. That is not so much (said the gallant Prince) as my misfortune is great that guides it this way. Well leaue we this (replied she) and go we where my Lady and the faire Laisa doe expect you: and haue patience, for this is but the touchstone, whereon the Ladie by true prooue makes triall of the Louer.

By this came the two Ladies fairer then Apollo, and Venus stepping forth, said. I did so greatly feare, despairing knight, that seeing your selfe at libertie, you would easily forget whom you left in prison, that I thought best to get company to seek you abroad, if you ouerlong should tarry, and with my owne hands take my reuenge, which should not be litle rigozous. Had I bene happie diuine Ladies (said the Prince) as to haue knowne this resolution, to feele the pleasure that wounds giuen by those your sacred hands doe yeeld, I would not haue so soone returned. But yet knowing the falling into any forgetfulnesse in you seruice, how litle soeuer, was paine intollerable, inforced me so soone to hasten my coming, to be resolved of your will, the which those Princes nor my selfe wil in nothing contradict. I loue so truly to keepe my word inuiolate heroicke Prince of Grecia (answered the Ladie) that I know not what moze to say: saying this, I doe altogether submit my fortunes to your order, which during life I wil obserue, assured that such a knight wil respect my poore immaculated honour, the which although in some respect I doe repugne, yet to frustrate my intended marriage, I wil venture my person in any peril you shal vndergo: therefore in this, there is no moze to doubt plot it as you thinke best, for that is our determination. And since the Gods haue in all things made you so absolute, doe not græue if I take this Ladie in my company: For shee will in no case remaine any longer in my Fathers Court, whilst I absent my selfe.



### The third Part of the third Booke

In charge had I that you last spake of (saide the Prince) from my Lord and Uncle the Prince of Dacia: but seeing she is pleased with what we al desired, let vs no longer procrastinate our iourney, making all things readie for the same two daies hence, in which time you may send to our lodging those things you shall bee best pleased to take with you. Be it as you haue said (soueraigne Prince, said Venus) for ha- uing in our defence the mightie Alphebos sonne, it is nothing wee haue vnderaken, were it farre harder.

Occasion they had to demaund for the Persian, which being not omitted, things passed so plainly, that the Greeke reioyced to see his friend so well imployed. Any ones good would glad him, though hee himselfe did want it. He tooke his leaue of the Ladies with a thousand imbracements, that had not Archisilora gouerned his soule, and the reason of his thoughts, it were no wonder had he stood a while pondering the content thereof: but he with one ordinarie courtesie in lieu of so many fauours, left them, of themselves iealous with feare of that they should do, although their comfort was, that such Princes had vnder- tooke their safetie.

They straight beganne to order the preparations for their iourney from Xantho. While the valourous Greeke returned to the Prince, that receiued him with exceeding ioy, relating to them all their conference, with the Ladies resolution, which not a little contented them, and mozeouer said. And I haue newe commendes to the haughtie Bransiniano, Prince of Persia, for the Ladies demaunded for none but him, and I am glad in my heart to knowe how matters passe, and in faith I had not thought the Dacian Lord to bee so warie. Valiant Greeke (said Don Eleno) knowe, that in matters of Loue, the greatest concealement is greatest fire, for nothing contents Cupid moze, then to see how by the sole motion of the eyes two agree, concluding moze with the sight, then others in an age, in present daily continual discourses. For nothing better blazoneth the soules netues, then the eyes, and if they so could, no maruell they be agreed, and greater matters can Loue so effect.

So with great content did they all expect the second day, to take the Ladies from the Ballace: for the men they sent for, were by that come to the place appoynted.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

The next day Fausta sent three or foure of the Ladies chests, and the one and the others, awaited the darknesse of the approaching night, wherin befell them what the next following Chapter doth relate.

### CHAP. VII.

How the Princes conueyed the Ladies out of the Pallace. The battell they had about them with the Kings Knights: and what more happened.



Alreadie had the starrie canopy of heauen darkened the earth with cloudie blacke obscuritie, when the foure mightie valiant warriors clad all in rich and strong habiliments of warre, accompanied with the two fierce gyants and twentie knights, (leaving the rest to guard the Ladies Coffers, and to aduertise the armie of their approach) arrived closely at the Garden gate, and making the accustomed signe, Fausta with more courage opened, where they found the Ladies so amazed with feare, that they had no power to utter one word.

It was no time for ceremonies, so Claridiano taking Venus in his armes, carried her out of the garden, and deliuering her to the Prince of Croatia, said. Receiue this gift (sir knight) for by doing it, I can release the bonds of my ingaged word. He could not answer, being overcloied with ioy, nor yet could he do otherwise. He returned like the winde for Laissa, (that more courage had then the other) hauing indured many perils, and gaue her to the Prince of Persia, whose gladnesse did exceed the greatest in the world.

He forgot not Palisandro, for almost he plainly conceived what happened in the Tower, so deliuering Fausta vnto him, spake. Since thou canst so well dissemble, thou deseruest to haue her in keeping. The Damzell was wittie and so replied. I would not (sir knight) that after you haue played your owne parts, you should thus ill rewarde me.

The want of power to care for so many (kinde Fausta) hath forced me.



### The third Booke of the third Part

mee to commit you to his guarding, that knows what torments do possesse me. Therevppon Don Elenos Dwarffe stept in with these words. I faith Prince of Grecia, if you vse to pay all your Squires in this manner, it will make mee rebell against Don Eleno my Lord, for he liuing secure, remembers not vs that be so destitute of fauours. The Dacian made answere. The not knowing thy minde (friend Lesbio) was cause I procur'd not thy remedie, but now I knowe thy will, I will ere long satisfie thy content. With many testes at length they arriued at their armie, where after they rested, the Græke would discharge his soule of part of her cares, wedding the beautionous Venus to the gallant Pollidolpho, with such content of all the hoste, that feared they not to be heard, had exprest it with applauding shouts. Here me thinkes (said Eleno) all the world flies from farther toyle, which being so, I will also do it, by leauing the protection of this loue-raigne Ladie, so bestowing her to the Persian, he saide. To you (sic Knight) must I deliuer her, being destitute of strength to guard her.

So well did Venus plead, knowing how the Persian was affected, that forthwith they were both espoused, to their admirable ioy. Content in pleasant chat, were these Princes, and also beeing night, it was not much if they enioyed any secret ioyes, I knowe not, but to increase their pleasure, the sencelesse trees were silent.

While they were in their iollitie, no little hurleburley had ouerturned the King and Princes quiet supposed rest of troubles in the Pallace, for going to supper, the Ladies were mist: they entred their chamber, where they found nothing but a letter, whose tenour was. That Venus was departed, wedded to Pollidolpho Prince of Croatia, a Knight that for merits of person and state, deserued no lesse then Venus: and Laissa vnder the Protect of Bransiniano Prince of Persia, backt and defended by the Prince of Grecia and Tribizound, togither with the valiant Lord of Dacia. The King was not a little daunted hearing those names, seeing how hard it was for him to bee reuenged, they being such mightie Princes: neuerthelesse hee commanded fortie thousand knights to be presently armed, and being diuided in two squadrons, to follow in search of them, for imagining they were alone, thought that meeting them, they would bee easily fetcht backe.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

One of the Squadrons the furious Lindauro did lead with the kings cousin. The Saracin was politique, and so supposing they might bee in the Louers Wood, which made him with swift steppes enter into the same, although the Princes hadde tane some other way.

All that night he lost himselfe, untill the next morning that hee met with some shepheards, of whome hee demaunded for them: they gaue him good tokens to haue seene them: telling him also that they were marched towards the sea. He turned about in all haste with his men in their pursuite, not demaunding whether they had any company or no: but so fast hyed the Princes, that ere they were ouertaken, Phoebus was past the middelt of his dyurnall course, and were so neare the sea, that from the Gallies they might beholde them.

The Princes (seeing they were but fewe more in number then they) iudged it cowardize, not to let them know, how they were incensed against them. So agreed to stay, committed the ladies to 100. knights, to conuey them to their ships, and deuided their battell into two parts. The one was commanded by Don Eleno and Bransiniano: and the other, guided the mightie Græke, with the new Bridegrome, who was one of the skilfullest in the world, to dispoise and order a battell.

In figure of a halfe Moone, they alwaighted their enemies, that seeing them not to be so many as themselves, courageously prepared to assault them, hoping the rest would also arrive to them: and with more ease to get the conquest, they approached with the noise of innumerable instruments, and in good order: for the kings Cousen was a politique knight. Worthy of seeing was their encountering: for though it was of no puissant hostes, yet so great was the horroz, as if one hundred thousand men had met. Foure did dispayning Lindauro ouerthrow befoze he brake his Launce: for the græfe to see his Lady in an others power, did incourage him: he drew forth his sword, and with it, in company of Tarfides (so was the kings cousin named) began to perfoyme wonders, onely they maintaining the heate of the fight. But that way the foure Heroicke Princes entred, no tongue can expresse their deeds, for they seemed no other then the reapers in the moneth of July among the ry-pened cozne: for their remorselesse blowes found no resist, that shields, helmes, armor, heads, bodies, and sometimes horses and all were sundzed in the middelt.



### The third Booke of the third Part

No lesse dammage did the Gyants in their furious passage with their battle-axe.

Admirable was the battle at this time, to heare the pitteous clamours of the wounded, the clashing of armour and weapons, with the resounding noyse of cutting strokes, and the running about the field of horses maisterlesse. So ill did not the Esclauonians behaue themselves, but they kild being killed, not so much procuring the defence of their owne liues, as their enemies deaths. Three houres endured the fight, without vantage knowne on either side: for the inhabitants would rather die, then suffer their Princesse violently by straungers to be carried away: but in the end of that terme, the Princes being heated in collos, the field had fewe to resist their mortall wounds, for euery blowe was the death of a knight.

By this Pollidolpho and Lindauro met, either by their deuises knew the other. Glad was the Croatian of the incounter, greatly desiring it, so said. Now is the time proud Prince, to shewe your daedes in fields, to be otherwise then words in the Pallace. Without admitting any answere, he did let flie at his Helme, on the outward side, all the Plumes and the crooked top he strooke away, making him shamefully bend in the saddle, and with another stroke laide him sencelesse along his horse. There he had slaine him, had not Tarsides arrined, staying him with a furious thrust, and giuing Lindauro time to recouer himselfe both at once, not respecting the lawes of knightood, charged the Croatian. But the venturous Louer bzauely withstood them, giuing and receiuing mightie blowes.

Altogither apparantly did the Esclauonians lose the field. For wanting most of their best Leaders, most pittifull was the bloodie massacre made of them. Not far off was their remedie, for at the Sunnes declining from the fourth houre, on the top of an hillocke, there appeared the Kings standard, with the other twentie thousand men. Who seeing the battle in those termes, prickt forth in all haste, to succor their friends that were vtterly discomfited. Great hurt did they vpon the Crotrians, which also feared some valuckie hap, so fierce was their assault.

Four more magnanimious knights then the Princes, were neuer scene: for though their enemies be treble three to one, their valour doth supply their want of multitude. Order was giuen none should harme



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

harne or touch the king for Venus sake. Who waighing the doubtfulnesse of the fight, commaunded the halfe of foure thousand men that kept the Gallies, should stand to ayde their Lords. It was to no small effect. For arming themselves, presently they obeyed, taking their way towards the hottest of the fight. As they went, two knights of admirable disposition, and in rich armes met them, and learning the cause of that conflict, determined to ayde the Ladie. Good was their helpe, being the two strong Princes, Don Argante of Phenicia, and Thorisiano, that together wandred to seeke their aduentures. They entred crying Croatia, when they beganne to driue backe. But these newe succours was a meane to regaine their lost aduantage, and set their aduersaries hope in daunger. Sundred were Tarsides and Lindauro, and unhappily did Tarsides fall into Don Elenos hands, whom he had incensed.

This occasion would not he lose, for with both hands he discharged Brutus sword vpon his shield, it yelds no defence, for in two it was parted, and with the swords poynt did wound him daungerously on his head. Hee closed with him, and for Venus sake would not kill him. But casting his strong armes about him, spurred his Tyrio, and snatcht him from his saddle, that being altogether breathlesse, hee deliuered him to foure knights, to conuey him to the Princesse Venus. The battell was cruelly renewed, and dead bodies lamentably falling on both sides: but the Princes being invincible, where ere they went, were assured of the victorie. Clearly had they obtained it, if Phoebus hastening his Westerne downfall, had not hid his light in Thetis watrie lap, leauing almost half of the Esclauonians dead, with foure thousand Croations, besides the wounded.

On either side retrait was sounded, for feare of the nights approach. Pollidelpho being in warre most polliticke, commaunded many fiers to be lighted, that his enemies might thinke they would stay til the morrow: which he nothing lesse minded, iudging it mere folie, because the king had his succors so neare, and they theirs so far off, marcht away to the sea side, causing all manner of lights in the Gallies to be fired, that the souldiers might imbarke themselves. They did so, leauing neuer a man on land, except the two Princes, whom another aduenture expected.

The next morrow, the Pagans thinking their enemies had stayed,



### The third Booke of the third Part

scarce had Aurora welcommed Apollo the East, when they began in rankes and files orderly to draw their men in field. No grieve is comparable to that which the king and Lindauro conceived, being aduertised by their spies what happened. So soone as it was knowne they followed towards the shore, thinking to ouertake them: but being thither come, were assured of their departure, which made the king & Prince most wofully, with bitter laments to exclaime: and more, missing their kinsman Tarsides, they wanted present means to follow them, which forced their returne to Xantho: where they gaue order to prepare all the shipping in the land. The like did the Sophi, knowing how his son was mocked. They gathered 600. sayles, which was the most famous flecte that euer came on those seas. They wasted 200. thousand men, and 400. Giants, of the fiercest in the world: with so great and puissant armies, he thought he might make warre vpon the greatest Potentate therof. Lindauro was appointed Generall by sea and land: that had hee not bene troubled with fantasticke vaine imaginary boastes, he had discharged the office with immortall fame. Some time was spent in the preparation and assembling of this mightie army, in which season, the Princes with their sayles spread in the winde, fearelesse of any thing, with their Ladies ioying in their company, within eight dayes landed at Geua, the chiefest haven in all Croatia. The inhabitants receiued the Princes with such ioy and costly triumphes, that to shun prolixitie, wee ouerpast day by day, the rumour stil increast of Lindauros coming: For which cause, as also for the ladies y<sup>e</sup> were with child, they intreated the princes to abide with them til they were in peace, or with assurance of agreement with Venus father: who knowing the imprisonment of her Cousen Tarsides, procured his libertie, with such entertainment as his merits deserued. It did so win him, as also seeing how well bestowed his Cousen was, that he determined to pacifie the proclaimed wars. Therupon he wrot to the king of Esclauonia, alleaging what hono<sup>r</sup> and greater disadvantage he incurred to persecute his daughter, since shee had chosen for her husband, the Prince Pollidolpho, rather then any other. And if she gaue her promise of marriage to Lindauro, it was onely to please his hono<sup>r</sup>, and not to satisfie her owne will, hauing before made it obedient to an others command. This letter a thousand times made him so recant his intent, as he was about so often to haue shewen it the Prince, yet he could not so close keep it, but he discerned it. Who

dissem



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

dissembling, seemed to take no notice of it, so that for all that, they let their fortunes on the seas, purposing to land in Croatia. They had done it, and it had bene one of the cruellest warre in the world, if the wise Nabato (considering his Don Eleno was there detained thereby) had not succoured them, by crossing the huge King with stormes and tempests, that the third part of the flecte was ouerwhelmed in the deuouring waters. They returned to Esclauonia, where taking counsell, Lindauo knowing that the Soldan of Nyquea, with the greatest part of Asia and Affrica, did assemble themselves together against Grecia, resolved to ioyne with them, that with so many multitudes, his reuenge might be the more easier. As it was determined, he put it in execution, and repairing his tempest beaten ships, directed his voyage towards S. Georges promontory, where it was reported all the generall forces met. Thus far (admired Ladies) proceeded the sole spoyle of the ioyes it procured, that by so many means sought the easie passage for his reuenge, vpon the robbers of his contents: who without remembrance of what hee (poore soule) indured, past the time in sports and reuels, till the season of the Ladies delivery was come, both who brought forth two Girles, whose beauties being in their prime, darkened Apollos clearest light. The childre were bozne with seuerall tokens: for the Persians had on their breasts Loues bowe and quier of arrowes. Venus daughter had also in the breast, a hand whiter then the snow, that twixt the fingers held a heart as red as blood. Much adoe there was to name them, in the end it was remitted to Claridiana, who therein shewed the sharpnesse of his wit, for considering they had got the mothers by force of armes, named the Babylonian Helena: he did not so amisse, because for her sake there were no lesse cruel wars, then Troye sustained about the first, as it is in the fourth part of this Historie. Venus girle was called Pollixena, in remembrance of her whose loue so dearly Greeke Archilles did abide. Euery one praised the wittie naming of the Ladies by the Prince, who expressed his ioy and loue in the performance of a famous ioust. He craued leaue of the Ladies to depart, thinking he wronged his owne, to liue so long in those pleasures, which he obtained with great difficultie. The day before the two Princes wold depart, Pollidolpho thus spake. It is so manifest (most mightie Prince) the many & infinit recoulesse fauours and benefits I haue at your hands received, which sorting to so high prized valor, my life is insufficient to satisfie the least degree



### The third Booke of the third Part

of gratitude : but neuerthelesse that you may knowe the zeale of my thankfull minde, and how I account my sole felicitie in your deare amitie, I am determined to become a Christian, for all my land will haue it so: by which act I do eternally propagate my loue, with such excellent warlike Princes: and therefore I will receiue the Baptisme at your hands, together with my wife and daughter. The Princes conceiued exceeding ioy with Pollidelphos deed : whereto Don Eleno thus replied.

Wee cannot but credibly beleue (most noble Prince) so illustrious a deed hath long since bene prophesied, with more diuine inspirations, then humane determination : to corroborate our friendship, there was no cause to intimate this: for to obserue the lawes of honourable true Loue, the least ground with so costly experience, were ynough. Hap-  
pie be this amitie, and confirmed with such bounds of faith, wee cannot feare that the alterations of time reuoluing chaunces, may any way preuaile against vs.

I knowe not whether I may call most happie, you or your subiects, for if they haue Pollidelpho for their Lord, you haue a people that amongst neighbours of most worth, had got the honour of themselves by so glorious a deed: the which may hee that hath begunne it, blesse, and to eternall posterities so propagate as we desire. Whereupon they embraced, as they had but then seen one another, doing the like by the beauntious Venus, confirming her daughters name. And Laissa seeing her husband a Christian, would not longer continue Pagan. For eight daies during the feastes of those solemnities, the Princes delayed their going, in the end whereof, the Graeke Prince, with onely his Squire Pallifandro, departed from his friends. His company required the Dacian, but Lesbio his Dwarfie would not: saying it behoued Claridiano to goe alone : where following the waxed bowsome of Neptunes region, we leaue them a while, to relate what else happened in Constantinople.

CHAP.



# ● of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

## CHAP. VIII.

The preparations the mightie Emperour *Trebatio* made, knowing all *Asia* and *Affrica* did rise in armes against him. And how *Archysibora* departed from the Court.



So many and so certaine were the newes that euery day were brought of the Nyquean Soldans mightie preparations, and of the aydes & helpes hee demanded of his bordering neighbour kings, that although it were not giuen out, gainst whom such hostile assemblies of Pagan Infidelles were pressed, yet would not the carefull Christian Emperour seeme carelesse of his necessarie affaires: but rather commaunded *Oristides* the newe Thessalian king, with al expedition to vnite, & with new supplies to strengthen al his scattered troupes, and with them to march away along the nearest of their enemies neighbouring holds, that their diligence might stay their haste. He obeyed, accompanied with his Sarmaria, and executed his office so well, that in fewe daies he reparted on thre frontiers, to the number of two thousand men. And leauing the Empire sure that way, he withdrew himselfe with fortie thousand men towards Nyquea, to see if the enemye would assault any place on the sudden. He performed it all with such happie speede, that his good diligence was to no small effect, so that is it which ouercomes the most labourous toyle. The Troyans quicke expedition was no meanes to make the Emperour be ydle, but rather to shewe his great care. For of Macedonians and Greccians, he gathered a well furnisht armie, wherewith he accounted himselfe secure. Of y last, no of those that seemed remisse in these broils, was *Torismundo* none, but being aduertised of the affaires, he shipt himselfe towards Spaine, where hee prouided all the gallies of Naples and Sicely, with those of Portugall, whose direction *Don Siluerio* commaunded them to obey. On the seas was not a more discreeter knight scene, better to order and reprehend a battell. With fve hundred sayles he began to plough the Western Ocean, which contained the powers of Spaine, France, and Portugall, whercof



### The third Booke of the third Part

Artie hundred thousand were Spaniards, with whose valor he doubted not to confront the proudest enemy. Of Portugals 40. thousand : whose skill on the sea, excelled the skillfullest. The French king with consent of the Prince Clauerindo, sent vnder the Spanish Ensignes 90. thousand well armed knights. Of all these men, he had made his Lieutenant Generall, his valiant son Corseho. About the end of Aprill with all these powers, the furious Torismundo found himselfe on y<sup>e</sup> vt<sup>m</sup> most confines of his land, in sight of Lauering, where ouerbiewing all his flecte, from the hatches of his Gallie, all in sanguine armor, raising his Beuer, and on a bloody Lance, he thus spake.

I shall not need most valiant knights to explicate in words, what great rewards a wel fought battle doth yeeld: nor what neuer dying honor is thereby obtained, where rather a man must be found dead, holding his sword within his hand, then for feare to haue it said, he did force it. But since we wade within such danger of our liues, I will no more remember saue the auncient blood from whence we do descend : since it was neuer said of a French man, y<sup>e</sup> killing he did flie. I will not particularize the deeds of Spaine, where fame these waste seas can memorise more then what is reported, that her ordinance in millitarie discipline is able to attempt the hardiest enterprise. The which since wee haue sufficient, conioyned with such strength, let vs imploy it all, for with so mightie forces, it were an easie matter to ruiuate the whole world. The which, that it may be done with more courage, I do denounce this war with fire and sword, to be executed, yet intreating, that none to shew himselfe valiant, become barbarously cruell : for nothing so much as it doth blemish the deserued reputation of a souldier. Where ending, the Admirall discharged three peeces of ordinance, as a signe that euery one should be ready against the mornings Sun vprise, with outspread sayles, to recommend their fortunes to the fauours of the winds and waues. A great encouragement to all the men were the Generalls animating words, whereat to expresse how feruently they were addicted to the warres, they all vnheathed their swords, proclaiming the obedient faith due to their Prince, who with a merrie gale of winde set towards Grecia, aduertising the Emperoz of his conning, who was not a little glad of his ayde.

He entered the wide Hauens of Constantinople, discharging all his grosse Artillerie, with such noise, that heauen and earth



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

earth seemed to meet, all the Castles answered them with the like.

There was none but came to the shore, to see the entrance of the Spanish Fleet. No lesse gallant on land, then a good souldier on Sea, would hee shewe himselfe, landing all the Spaniards in good order, bravely attired, and euery one with a greene scarfe a crosse his breast, to distinguish them from the Frenchmen, that wore theirs red, and the Portugals russet. In this maner he landed 50000. Spaniards, 30. thousand Portugals, and fiftie thousand French, leaving the rest to guard and defend his Gallies. It exceedingly gladdened the Emperour to see so well furnished men, and chiefly with father and sonne, whom hauing neuer before seene, in his very soule he reioyced to see their excellent disposition. By land was alreadye arriued his deare Grisanda, whose companie was most welcome to the Greeke Ladies. The immeasurable ioy cannot be expressed, which the Spaniards conceined seeing the Dames of Greece, and as in warre no amorous thoughts were euer troublesome to a souldier, so the dread command of angrie Mars, could not hinder them from the procurement of some sweet surcease, in whose name they might imploy the valor of their persons. This pleasing life did little last, for the Emperour hauing true notice that his friends were comming to succor him, resolved to go & seek his enemies, & know gainst whō such innumerable powers were assēbled. On the other side, the absence of his deare sonnes much troubled him, for he had onely with him his sonne Rosuler, that at Oliuas intreaties did stay. Also the furious Brandafidel was with him, on whose strength he reposed much hope.

The Greeke Alpheo had no need of aduertisement, for the generalitie of the warres was come vnto his eares, and so with the greatest power he could bruite, withdrew himselfe to Tribizound, accompanied with Braminoro and Tefereo: who most græued at the Princes absence, was the beautilous Archisilora, attributing the lacke of Claridianos presence to her owne strangenesse: her sorrow was easily discerned by her outward semblance. No lesse was Rosamondes to see her so: knowing the cause, it so tormented her, that for feare it should be perceiued, she resolved to absent her selfe, for commanding the Gouvernors of her kingdome, should with all conuenient speede, conduct the greatest power of well provided men they could select out of her kingdome to Constantinople, and there to rest vnder the Emperours government.

They



### The third Booke of the third Part

They accomplisht their Quæns behest (for then she, no Princesse was more with loue respected of subiects) sending when time serued, fiftie thousand of well armed men. The day before her departure, shee tooke her leaue of Rosamond with no felwe teares, for neuer betwene two Ladies was such sympathie of true amitie. Very importunately she offered her cōpany, but as any good societie wold but aggravate the Quænes euill, shee would not admit it: saying shee might not leaue Greece and the Emperour in such necessitie. When her armes (being the best the world contained) she presented her. When shee also refused, for Lirgandeo had prouided her with such as were requisite for safegard of her person: which were of the same colour as Claridianos, sauing that the sable barres were filled with flames of fire: on her shield was a gallant deuise, for out of a field full of odoriferous flowers, a Ladie seemed to go in search of a knight, after whom she in great haste ascended by a craggie rocke, from whence she looked after the content she lost: and the Motto betwene them, thus.

Little hope of ioyes abide,  
That leaue knowne ioyes, for ioyes vntride.

Alone would the warlike Warriour needs go, thinking her greefe a sufficient company: all the Court sorrowed for her absence: but Lirgandeo assuring them of her safetie, their discontent was lessened, mounted on a lustie Courser, shee crost the woods of Greecia, thinking on her Lord, calling her selfe a thousand times most cruell, for that in being so, shee had lost him: and by the losse, obtained so great torments. Shee shipt her selfe in a barke bound for Alexandria, resolute to trauell the whole world, in pennance of her folly. One night among the rest, while the warriors slept, she walked (as she vsed) on the hatches, with her lamets, to make the watric dwellers partakers of her greefes: at such time that another barke sayled by hers, from whence might be heard some entermingled grones with sighes. She could not knowe what it was, so swift it went away. After it with all possible speede, with oyes and sayles, she commaunded hers should followe: it was done with such diligence, till shee ouertooke the barke, wherein shee saue a Knight complaine of Loue and Fortune thus.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Ah me vnfortunate Prince (said the knight) is it possible there should  
 be no euill, but the extreamest sorrow it containes, my perplexed soule  
 should feelee? Why should I hope for any good, when with mine eyes I  
 see it flie from me? There is no inconuenience but haunts me, ex-  
 cept death, with whom I cannot be acquainted. Oh Greekish Prince,  
 how happily mayest thou call thy selfe happie, by being in thy infancie  
 brought vp with the soueraigne of my life, and hearts direction, since  
 that was an occasion for the obtaining of those rights solely due to  
 to me. Oh Liriano, (thy name being sufficient to allwaie the græse  
 that me torments) who might by sacrificing my life into thy hands, as-  
 sure thee in faith thy Louer deserue not comparison with me. To you,  
 to you, Sea-Gods do I complaine: Oh you I pray, that seeing her  
 celestiaall habitation is in your vasse confused watrie kingdome, a little  
 intreate her for the unhappie Bembo. Oh Loue, how rigorously hast  
 thou in all things shewen thy crueltie against me? Wherein haue I  
 offended thee? When disobeyd I thy commands? When violated I thy  
 lawes? abolished thy rights? or when did my painfull thoughts harbo-  
 or conceiue the least imagination against thy honour or deitie? If this  
 be so, and not vnknown to thee, why dost thou wound him with ty-  
 rannie, that is orbozne with weaknesse, and thy disastrous chan-  
 ces? Oh how may any (pardon me faire Ladies) be hereafter con-  
 fident on your perfections, your crueltie being as great as your beau-  
 ties are incomparable, if you reward him that can lone, like him that  
 onely liues to hate?

No more could the Ladie heare, for the barke was guided by  
 Luperio, but what she heard was ynough to increase her paine, and  
 raise some doubt, that the named Prince was he whom she loued. Oh  
 generall plague (said the græued Lady) none canst thou forgive, shew-  
 ing thy care in most tormenting them, that are most carelesse of  
 thee.

A shower of infinit teares rained the Queene downe her pearled  
 cheekes, proceeding from the extremitie of loue: hauing so done, seeing  
 her selfe comfortlesse, and not knowing whom to aske for, hauing no  
 notice of the Greekes deuise, she began to giue vent vnto her swelling  
 thoughts, singing these verses.

My

My



### The third Booke of the third Part

My heart will burst except it be discharg'd,  
Of his huge load, that doth oppresse it so:  
Streames stop, or flow the bankes, if not enlarg'd,  
And fire suppress, doth much more fiercer grow.

Great woes tipt vp, but halfe the woe remaines:

But paines concealde, doth aggrauate the paines.  
Sing then my soule the storie of my losse,  
Forme in sweete words the anguish of my minde:  
Yet doo not: singing ill becomes a crosse,  
Rather sigh out, how hard Loues yoke I finde.

Loue is a sicknesse, singing a ioy:

And pleasure is no pack-horse for annoy.  
And must I then, knowing Loue a disease,  
That fills our soules with strang calamities:  
Spite of my heart enforc'd my selfe to please,  
And in mine owne armes hug my miseries?

And seeing still my state waxe worse and worse,

Must I of force embrace and kisse my curse.  
I must, I must, *Cupid* hath sworne I must,  
And 'tis in vaine and bootlesse to resist:  
Then be not (*Loue*) oh be not too vniust,  
I yeeld me to thy rule, rule how thou list.

For my reclaim'd rebellion shall bring forth,

A treble dutie to thy glorious woorth.

Oh *Loue*, sweete *Loue*, oh high and heavenly *Loue*,  
The Court of pleasure, Paradise of rest:  
Without whose circuit all things bitter prooue,  
Within whose centure euery wretch is blest.

Oh graunt me pardon sacred deitie,

I do recant my former heresie.

And thou the gearest Idoll of my thought,  
Whom loue I did, and do, and alwaies will:  
Oh pardon what my coy disdaine hath wrought,  
My coy disdaine, the author of this ill.

And for the pride that I haue shew'd before:

(By *Loue* I sweare) Ile loue thee ten times more.

Hast thou shed teares? those teares will I repay,



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood. I

Ten teares for one, a hundreth teares for ten.

Hath my proude rigor hunted thee astray?

Ile loose my life, or bring thee backe agen.

Each sigh Ile quittance with a thousand grones,

And each complaint with a whole age of mones,

And when I finde thee, as I finde the will,

Or loose my selfe in seeking what I loue:

Then will I trie with all true humble skill,

Thy pittie on my great offence to moue.

Till when, my griefes are more then tongue can tel,

My daies are nights, and euerie place is hell.

With a heauie sigh shee ended: but as if singing had but in part discharged her sorowes, she beganne with saying to prosecute them as followeth. **Ay me! Queen of Lyra,** (said the Ladie) that hauing no cause to complaine, do suffer thus deservedly, a iust pay for such deserts. Of whom else might I hope to bee loued, being by the Greeke Prince adored? On the earth, of whom couldest thou expect any good, if not from thy Greeke? Oh woe is me, that the trust of my small consideration should bring me to this passe, that I must make the winds witnesse of my paines: and that to my vnblesmyght honours cost, I must liue and wander by sea and land, demanding for him Archyloras loue: when I mought haue liued with ioy, with pleasure, and in quiet, by giving him a little signe of that happinesse, I my selfe receiued by being his: but seeing it is thus brought about, loue I will, and patiently embrace this iust imposed toyle.

Here was her languishment renewed, seeing a knight come directly towards her shippe, lying a long the hatches of another, exclaiming against Cupids ordinances. **Who euer suffered** (said he) **his heart to followe and seeke his owne dishonour? What lawe allows the soule to disclose that, whose secrecie preserueth no lesse then life? Accidents be these onely incident in loue, for he as the King of extreames enforceth me, not regarding my fame, to procure anothers content. Oh** (most valiant knight) **who shall beleue thou shouldest with mee violate thy word?**

**Thou knowest I loue thee, & also y I follow thee, but I know to aggrauate my woe,**



## The third Part of the third Booke

Woe, thou fliest my presence : What is become of those swete words at our parting thou spakest : where is the faith wherewithon my hands thou vowedst loyaltie, protesting, if any pleasure thou shouldest haue, it would procede only from thinking thou art mine : Thou doest ill guerdon the bonitie wherewith I laide open vnto thee the secrets of my soule, making my selfe tributary vnknowne to whome. I did it when thou iudgedst it newe life, newe ioy, newe ease, and newe content : But now altogether forgetfull, thou fliest from me, that liue to loue thee.

So ouerwhelmed in her owne thoughts was the bewteous Floralizar, who departing from the furious Brauorant, followed the searche of the Tinacrian, whom shee so intierly affected, that shee regarded not whether any heard her. By the complaints did Archisilora knowe her to be a Ladie, and pittying her, caused her Barke to be grappled with the other, and saide. No maruell (heroicke Ladie) that since the lande hath already beene acquainted with your constancie, you nowe participate your faith vnto these inhospitable waters. Be of good courage, for you haue company in your woes : and such as wil neglect his owne to remedie yours. At the voyce rose Floralindas daughter, and replied.

Who are you (Syr knight) that so kindly doe commiserate my paine, which is the greatest that euer was inclosed in any humane breast : I am hee (saide Archisilora) who with my soule (valiant Ladie) will procure your quiet : and therefore pray you, accept such seruice as my Barke wil yeld : for it may be, the recitall of your griefs to me, and I mine to you, wil be a mitigation of some sorrow. He not forgo the enioying of so good company as that you offer mee (Syr knight) said Floraliza, intreating I may knowe who you be that already knowes my griefs : The Ladies gallant behauior had attracted the Lirian Patrons affection, who replied. In more then this doe I desire to satisfie you soueraigne Ladie, but first step into my ship, where I wil do it at full. To know your name (answered Floraliza) a harder enterprise would I attempt. So leapt she into the Quenes Barke, saying. Advantage hath my Barke got (sir knight) with my absence, to which being alone, the winds and waters may now be more fauourable, then when I was in it, and since we haue this opportunitie, deare sir, defer not my desire. With neuer a word the haughtie Quene unlaced her



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

her Helme, resting more faire then was Latonas sonne, when onely for loue he kept Admetus sheepe. Floralizas was also of, whose beautie was equalled by fewe, and that want was with valour supplied.

Let it not græue you Soueraigne Lady said the Quene, that I knowe the cause of your mones, for mine are no lesse: which I suffer seeking for him, that ought to dye louing, but since I am the cause therof, it is reason I endure the extremitie of græse: and seeing loue hath equalled vs therein, Ile no longer keepe from you who I am. So she related vnto her euerie thing she could, not naming Claridiano. Why now (said Alicandros Pæce) I do account my paine a pleasure, being pittied by you, and haue assured hope we shall quickly finde redresse: where to the Quene answered.

Gladly would I know who he is to laboꝝ your content. Any certaine thing I know not (replied she) more then that I am an others: for a brother of mine called Celindo, and my selfe, were brought vp, without knowledge of father, though since we receiued the order of armes, we haue met with certaine tokens to be childzen vnto the prince Meridian.

Exceeding ioy conceined the Quen, of the Ladies company, resolving to enioy it so long as she would. They vowed firme amitie, which towards the peace was of no small effect: for this Lady was of highest estimation among the Pagans, in the Grecian warres. By little and little being tender of yeares, and knowing that the manifesting of their loues, was some ease to their bozthering cares, either vnderstood who was the Louer to the other. Vppon which occasion Floraliza thus saide.

So that our fortune doth permit (most Pærelesse Princesse) the Greeke Princes to triumph ouer our hearts. Seeing the heauens will haue it so (excellent Lady answered the Quene) and so haue fauoured them from their birthes, we cannot but acknowledge their Soueraigntie, specially the Tynacrian Prince, knowing how great his gaines are, thus being loued. To which Floraliza made answer. Stay my good Quene: how well (by knowing your selfe to be loued) do you iudge a straungers distresse: who would not liue contented in midst of the greatest euill, were wee certaine of that assurance: What paine would not then be a pleasure: or what could make mee a stranger to my selfe, onely seeking the company of my woes: But I



## The third Part of the third Booke

Woe, thou fliest my presence : What is become of those swete words at our parting thou spakest : where is the faith wherewithon my hands thou bowedst loyaltie, protesting, if any pleasure thou shouldest haue, it would proceede only from thinking thou art mine : Thou doest ill guerdon the bounty wherewith I laide open vnto thee the secrets of my soule, making my selfe tributary vnknowne to whome. I did it when thou iudgedst it newe life, newe ioy, newe ease, and newe content : But now altogether forgetfull, thou fliest from me, that liue to loue thee.

So ouerwhelmed in her owne thoughts was the bewteous Floralizar, who departing from the furious Brauorant, followed the searche of the Tinacrian, whom shee so intierly affected, that shee regarded not whether any heard her. By the complaints did Archisilora knowe her to be a Ladie, and pittying her, caused her Barke to be grappled with the other, and saide. Po maruell (heroicke Ladie) that since the lande hath already beene acquainted with your constancie, you nowe participate your faith vnto these inhospitable waters. Be of good courage, for you haue company in your woes : and such as wil neglect his owne to remedie yours. At the voyce rose Floralindas daughter, and replied.

Who are you (Syr Knight) that so kindly doe commiserate my paine, which is the greatest that euer was inclosed in any humane breast : I am hee (saide Archisilora) who with my soule (valiant Ladie) will procure your quiet : and therefore pray you, accept such seruice as my Barke wil yeld : for it may be, the recitall of your griefs to me, and I mine to you, wil be a mitigation of some sorrow. He not forgo the enioying of so good company as that you offer mee (Syr knight) said Floraliza, intreating I may know who you be that already knowes my griefs : The Ladies gallant behauior had attracted the *Lirian* Patrons affection, who replied. In more then this doe I desire to satisfie you soueraigne Ladie, but first step into my ship, where I wil do it at full. To know your name (answered Floraliza) a harder enterprise would I attempt. So leapt she into the Quenes Barke, saying. Advantage hath my Barke got (sir knight) with my absence, to which being alone, the winds and waters may now be more fauourable, then when I was in it, and since we haue this opportunitie, deare sir, defer not my desire. With neuer a word the haughtie Quene unlaced her



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

her Helme, resting moze faire then was Latonas sonne, when onely  
foz loue he kept Admetus sheepe. Floralizas was also of, whose beau-  
tie was equalled by fewe, and that want was with valour supplied.

Let it not græue you Soueraigne Lady said the Quene, that I knowe  
the cause of your mones, for mine are no lesse: which I suffer seeking  
foz him, that ought to dye louing, but since I am the cause therof, it is  
reason I endure the extremitie of græse: and seeing loue hath equalled  
vs therein, Ile no longer keepe from you who I am. So she related  
vnto her euerie thing she could, not naming Claridiano. Why now  
(said Alicandros Pæce) I do account my paine a pleasure, being pittie-  
ed by you, and haue assured hope we shall quickly finde redresse: wher-  
to the Quene answered.

Gladly would I know who he is to laboꝝ your content. Any cer-  
taine thing I know not (replied she) moze then that I am an others:  
foz a brother of mine called Celindo, and my selfe, were brought vp,  
without knowledge of father, though since we receiued the order of  
armes, we haue met with certaine tokens to be childzen vnto the prince  
Meridian.

Exceeding ioy conceined the Quen, of the Ladies company, resolving  
to enioy it so long as she would. They belovd firme amitie, which to-  
wards the peace was of no small effect: foz this Lady was of highest  
estimation among the Pagans, in the Grecian warres. By little and  
little being tender of yeares, and knowing that the manifesting of their  
loues, was some ease to their bozthering cares, either understood who  
was the Louer to the other. Uppon which occasion Floraliza thus  
saide.

So that our fortune doth permit (most Pærelesse Princesse) the  
Greeke Princes to triumph ouer our hearts. Seeing the heauens  
will haue it so (excellent Lady answered the Quene) and so haue fa-  
uoured them from their birthes, we cannot but acknowledge their So-  
neraigntie, specially the Tynacrian Prince, knowing how great his  
gaines are, thus being loued. To which Floraliza made answer.  
Stay my good Quene: how well (by knowing your selfe to be loued)  
do you iudge a straungers distresse: who would not liue contented  
in middest of the greatest euill, were wee certaine of that assurance:  
What paine would not then be a pleasure: or what could make mee a  
stranger to my selfe, onely seeking the company of my woes: But I



## The third Booke of the third Part

feare illustrious Ladie, that as the heauens haue made them absolute happie, so some one of them will place his felicitie in scorning her shall most intierly loue him: And if any there be that wil most truly verifie my doubt, it wil be the sonne of that most cruel Garrofilea: For what could proceed from so cruel a mother, but so cruel a sonne, to reiect the constantest faith that any age ere knew. Let it not so græue you bewteous Floraliza (said the Queene) that the knight of the Braunch do wander in absence of your presence, so we distrust not of his loue: And you do not well to condemne him of ingratitude: for ile pawne my word vnto you, bowing by my high thoughts, to procure with all my power your chæfest ioy: for it were iniustice, another should call him hers, you being alone in the world that deserue him.

This liberall promise was some comfort to Floraliza, as thinking that in her company she should not meete with any inconuenience, although she perswaded her selfe she should not hope ever to be by him beloued. In pleasant discourses of Loue and Armes, they past away, their else ouer tedious voyage, vntil the fiftene day of their Nauigation, that they arrived at the fruitful land of Tinacria, where what aduentures there befel them, another Chapter shall relate.

### CHAP. IX.

The aduentures that happened vnto the two Ladies in *Tynacria*, with certaine Gyants that had by stealth imprisoned the Queene *Garrofilea*, and her bewteous daughter *Rosaluyra*.



Lad in their glittering rich abilllements of warre, landed the two warrelike Ladies, bzinging on shoare the Queenes Horse: which she offered to Floraliza, that would not take it, but would goe a foote, which made Archiflora do the like, with maiesticke pace leading her Courser by the bzidle. Along a broade and beaten pathe traueled both these Princes of belwie, and Bellonas in valour.

They had not gone scarce a mile, when they espied three knights of gallant disposition: and well mounted, comming the same way: a crosse the



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

the same lane issued an other : then whom the Ladies had not seene many of moze liberal and bzauier carriage : his deuice and armes were discribed at the Tryumphes in Constantinople , for this was Don Clarisel of Assyria, Floralizas great Louer. Well did the Lady know him, and although the faith he shewed her, could no whit withholde her affection from the Tynacrian : Nevertheless, it pleased her to giue him that content that Ladies vse to yeeld in pleasant chat, reseruing the best for their soules beloued. She tolde the Quene, how she knewe that knight, but it behoued her to bee then concealed , for that she told her.

At length they all met, and none of them but incessantly gazed on both the Ladies. None of the thre knights were so courteous as the Assyrian Prince, and so the one said. It were some ease (Sir knights) for one to ride while the other went on foot, and so by turnes to vse your horse. Because we will not trouble our selues (answered Floraliza) to mount and dismount so often, we haue chosen thus to trauell together, vntill by some good chance we get an other horse. This countrey doth yeeld so fewe (said he) Sir knight, that I feare it will be very hard to get one. Notwithstanding, I had rather haue my hopes (replied the lady) the thy vnciuill answere : whereto the knight said. What, comming on foot and with such little shew of valour, dare you make comparatines with my words? which were you better mounted then I am, I would not suffer, especially comming as you do.

There is no fault (said the Lady) but may bee found in a discourteous knight, and therefore, hauing committed this, there is no doubt but you haue all the rest : yet if you will try your much strength with mine, I am content to doo it : conditionally, that he which shall forgoe his saddle, lose his horse and armour. Had you a horse (said the knight) I would not much care to doo it, were it but to disburthen you of your armed load : which now in hotte weather will be surely troublesome.

Let not that grieue you (said shee) for my companion will lend me his horse, and be content to lose him, if you ouertholue me. Care he could answere, with such grace she leapt into the saddle, that the Quen and Prince were amazed, and bzandishing her Lance, she went towards the knight, saying.



### The third Booke of the third Part

So too, discourteous knight, now is the time to trie whether of the two can better keepe his armour. Forced through the challenge hee had made, and the presence of his companions, he turned about his great horse, which was the last he did in all his life. For meeting, although the Ladie receiued a strong encounter, hers was such, that making three parts of the lance appeare at his backe, at one instant, he lost horse, armour, and life.

No longer stayed the other two, seeing their friend slaine, but ranne against the Ladie, no more stirring her, then if they had run against a rocke. The Quene was abashed, seeing how basely the Knights behaued themselves, so drawing forth her good sword, at two steps shee was where Floraliza stood, with Camillas in her hand. The Quene entred sidelong with her sword aloft, which valiantly discharging on the knights helin, she strooke him from his horse, and with another, on the ground ended his life: which done, quickly mounted his horse, confounding the Assyrian with admiration, who turning about, sawe the Ladie beate the other knight vnto the earth, with a most pittieous wound: whose paine, ere it left him, left him lifelesse. The Quene went to her, and laughing said. In faith (sir knight) wee haue now horses for Pages, had we brought any, if they were on foote, & wanting armour, here we want no choise.

A greater punishment then this (said Floraliza) deserued their discourtesie: and turning to the Assyrian, thus spake. Haue you any need (sir knight) of our helpes, for since we haue got horses, a litle haste else calles vs away. By the voyce he seemed to know her, whose figure he had impressed in his heart, and so in some amazement did replie. Not at this time (sir knight) more then comming in time, that I might enioy the sight of your high deed, I would not lose the conceiued content of gazing on them, especially being atchiued by whom deserues the honour of euery victorie. So fearing the Prince had knowne, or that by longer conuersation she might be discovered, she tooke leaue of him, and with the Quene entred into a thicket adioynning, to rest, not of the battell toyle, but of the seas wearinesse. They allighted, letting their horses feed on the grasse, where shee recounted who Don Clarisell was, and how sincerely he published himselfe to bee her Louer, and how unknowne to either, they were brought vp in one wood. She did recite the aduentures with such passion, that the Quene verily



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

rily he should certainly marry her.

In many diuers matters did the two Ladies chat away the afternoon, leauing vntil the next day their approach vnto the great and famous Citie of Tynacria, where so many aduentures happened vnto the mightie Emperour Trebatio. It greatly pleased Floraliza to tread on the soyle of her deare knight, hartily beseeching the immortal Gods, to graunt her no other end of her desires then her faith deserued, where with she sought him: for she neuer imagined any thing, but what increased loue, to loue him, and with unfained constancy harbouring his affaires in the midst of her heart, transferring them from thence vnto the soule, to giue them there a place moze quiet, free from the woorlds perturbations, and fortunes assaulting stormes: and where she might better contemplate her happinesse, being the Tynacrians Haisters. They scruple of that litle they had from the Barke brought, with moze content in being there pursuing their Louers, then were they in Constantinople, feeding on the daintiest cates of the Emperours Court. Having done, they a while discoursed of their knights, thinking that time lost wherein they did not remember them. The houre of rest being come, the tender Ladies made their blanckets of their beds, the earth, and for pillowes took their Helmes, and not without some teares to see themselves in that manner, and vncertaine whether their toyle would auaille them. She that slept least, not for louing most, but fearing her affections zeale would not bee accepted, was the Emperour Alicandros Peerce, that about midnight vnclasping the booke of her secret thoughts, she found it so full of amorous arguments, grounded on deare experience, that it caused in her a newe griepe: which tormenting her with some extraordinary passion, to giue it passage she sat her vnder a loftie Wyne, where supposing the Quene of Lyra was not awake, she began with moze melodious harmony (then his, that descended into the bowtes of hell, among those blacke inhabitants, to fetch his deare wife) to sing these verses.

Once I thought, but falsly thought  
Cupid all delight had brought,  
And that Loue had been a treasure,  
And a Pallace full of pleasure,  
Bur alas! too soone I proue,  
Nothing is so sower as Loue.

That for sorrow my Muse sings:  
Loue's a Bee, and Bees haue stings.



### The third Part of the third Booke

When I thought I had obtained  
That deare lollace, which if gained  
Should haue caus'd all Ioy to spring,  
(View'd) I found it no such thing:  
But in steed of sweete desires,  
Found a Rose hem'd in with Bryers.  
That for sorrow my Muse sings:  
Loue's a *Bee*, and *Bees* haue stings.

Wonted pleasant life adew,  
Loue hath chaung'd thee for a new:  
New indeed, and sowre I proue it,  
Yet I cannot chuse but loue it.  
And as if it were delight,  
I pursue it day and night.  
That with sorrow my Muse sings:  
I loue *Bees*, though *Bees* haue stings.

With many Millions of sighs she ended. The swete melodie alwaies  
ked the faire Archisilora, isying to see her so firme a Louer. Long did  
they not continue thus, by reason that from the farthest side of the thicke  
ket, they heard the trampling of many horses, and now & then, the cries  
of outraged Ladies, by violence oppressed. A little thing was enough to  
moue them, being naturally bold, together they rose & bridled their horses,  
and swifter then the wind they spurd after the noyse. In such haste  
went they, that though they quickly got into the high way, yet could  
they not know the cause. They durst not sunder themselves for feare  
of losing, but rather referring their affaires to Fortunes dispose, they  
followed along that way which was most beaten with horses hooves:  
Two myles they gallopt not finding what they desired, til with y<sup>e</sup> mornings  
sunns vp rise, in a large faire plain they descried some 40. knights,  
and 3. Gyants, that guarded a waggon drawne with 4. horses. Assured  
to haue found what they sought, they let goe their Coursers reignes,  
with more fiercenesse then Mars himself. Neuer was such boldnes seen,  
for the knights were mightie, and for y<sup>e</sup> enterpryse chosen, and y<sup>e</sup> Gyants  
euery one an Hercules. Neuertheles, the royall Ladies nothing doubting  
the fearful assault, with their swords in hand, entred among those  
knights, as the hungry Lyon enters a heard of haumelesse sheep, to seek  
his praise.

Against



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Against the Ladies strength, their aduersaries steele doubled shélds no: fine tempoꝛed armoꝛ was no defence: foꝛ their valoꝛ and puissance was infinit, and the desire they had to free the prisoners, made them with moze foꝛce flourish their swords among them. Ere they were aware, eight of their fellows were slaine, and the rest strooke the Ladies with many encounters: but their Armoꝛ was such, as they suffered no impression. So the furie of their Launces being past, Oh Archyfilora, who would not admire thee, seeing thee raised on thy styrops, the shéld at thy backe, and with thy sword betwixt both thy hands, range among those knights, giuing no blowe, but was deadly, oꝛ deadly wounding: At her heeles followed the Sythian Matrone, that no lesse then she made her selfe feared with Camillas blade, whose edge euen to the bone pierced their armoꝛ. It seemed they both strived to exceed the other in deeds, almost impossible in humane sight.

Abashed were the Gyants together with a bigge knight that was Lord of them all, to see how two knights hazarded their pryze, with so much labour obtained: to be rid of them two Gyants, with croes of Iron made towards them, crying to their knights: Away, away, you cowards, foꝛ shame blush to see two knights thus vled. Neuer were they by them obeyed moze willingly then then: foꝛ with the word they withheld their swords, accounting that comānd their liues, which fighting with the two, they aduentured on the dyce. The two mightie Gyants on their styrops stretcht themselves, and shaking their armes, threw the croes moze fiercer then were they hurried from a Cannons mouth. Carefully did the two Ladies (seeing how it concerned them) expectit, that spurring their hōꝛses, gaue way vnto the Javelings, and ioyning so neare their Baisters, that ere they drew their Emmitoꝛs, they made them feeble the waight of their armes. So eager was Meridians daughters assault, that she lost the strength of her blowe, yet was it such, that falling on his Breuer it dazelled his sight, and wounded him at large on the fronte, from whence the blood issuing, and dropping in his eyes, blinded him, to the Ladies great advantage. Forward she past, swifter then lightning, and with the same she turned: at such time that the Gyant did so, as furious as a bayted Bull, with his Jawchon rayled against her, that he wounded him, and at once on either discharged the furie of their weapons.



### The third Part of the third Booke

A thousand starres saw the Lady within her rich helme, but the Giants was filled with blood, for the thin edged sword on the head, wounded him dangerously. This while was not the Queene idle, for in her assault she had brauely done her part: and being longer winded, and more vled to the warre then Floraliza, with Mars his strength, she laid him on the side of his helme, disarming all that part, and on the head gaue him a mightie wound, cutting away a peece of the skull, and the blade discharging downe the shoulder, with like furie, as the roaring waters runne through a lockt riuer, it strooke away all his Manbrace, and with it cut all the laces off his shield, and made him shake like a lostie Wyne: strooke with an other blast, she gaue her horse the reignes, and quickly turned him befoze the Gyant, settled himselfe, shee let flie at his wounded arme.

This blowe assured her the victorie, for lighting on the vnarmed place, she threw it to the ground, and made him roare horribly: for the wound was mortall. Without payment scaped not the Queene, for ere his soule departed, dispairing of life, so mightie a blowe hee discharged on her head, that she fell vpon her horse, voyding much blood from her mouth: with such strength was it executed, that finding no other stay, it drew the Gyant after it, who like a Tower ouerturned with a whirle winde, he fell downe.

Long in accompanying him was not the other, for Floraliza enuying what the Queene had done, so vehemently pursued her Combat, that she tumbled the Gyant at her horses fete, with so many deadly wounds, that he straight gaue his soule vnto the diuell, that long since had expected it.

No longer stay made the other Gyant and knight, but with their Coursers fastest running, prickt against the Ladies, to surprize them vnawares. Dangerous were not the encounters, by reason of their enchanted armor, though they were extreame greuous. Betweene the foure, they began one of the brauest battels on the earth. But at the instant it was disordered: for the knights not respecting their honors, altogether stept to aide their maisters: in no little danger were the ladies, seeing themselves assaulted so many waies: but fetching strength and courage from their amorous breasts, they inacted deeds impossible to Mars his sight.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

He that most vert them was the great Knight, being one of the stoutest in all Paganisme. With him the faire Quene made her battell, thinking by that meanes the victorie was surest. Shee left the beautiful Floraliza with the Gyant, and some twentie knights that were left, but so wounded, that she quickly brought them to twelue. They were all busied in those bloodie affaires, when the braue Assyrian like a thunderbolte galloped along that field towards them: who also had heard the Ladies outcries in the Chariot, and hasting to helpe them, had lost himselfe in the wood, notwithstanding he came in good time, amazed to see so many dead.

He knew the knights, and they him: he entred with his lance about hand: a better blowe was not executed in that battell, for approaching the place where his Ladie fought, strongly vbrandishing, he threwe it at the Gyant, which penetrating all his steeles places, it appeared at his backe, the pike bloodie with his hearts goze. This blowe was to no small purpose, for it moued a suddain strange alteration in the Ladies breast, iudging so well of him that gaue it, that ouer ioyed with that content, she said to her selfe. Oh most heroicke Knight, would I might satisfie thy desires, and not wrong the Tanacirian. Where stayed not the gallant Don Clarissell, for drawing forth Mylos furious sword, he gaue no blowe, but overthrew an enemy dead: close by them went the Ladie, exceeding glad to see him. On horsebacke was the Prince, one of the greatest knights in the world, and so richly armed, no heart could desire more. For all this, ceased not the warlike Lirian Matrone to pursue the great Knight, entering, and retiring with such agillitie, as Mars himselfe, were hee there, could wish no more.

In his countrie was the Pagan accounted the valiantest knowne, wherefore he brauely held out in fight. Of all helpees needed he, combatting with the Quene, both in beautie, and in valour, who flourishing her weapon, stept in with one foote forward, and lay open, that the Pagan might enter: who being exceeding skilfull, perceived her intent, and making her loose two blowes, gaue her two thrusts one after another, which forced her to bow backwards on her horse: as she raised her selfe, with all possible speede hee strooke her on her rich helme, but reacht her onely with the poynt, wherefore the blowe was not to much purpose, though it graued her much.



### The third Part of the third Booke

A thousand starres saw the Lady within her rich helme, but the Giants was filled with blood, for the thin edged sword on the head, wounded him dangerously. This while was not the Queene idle, for in her assault she had brauely done her part: and being longer wounded, and more bled to the warre then Floraliza, with Mars his strength, she laid him on the side of his helme, disarming all that part, and on the head gaue him a mightie wound, cutting away a peece of the skull, and the blade descending downe the shoulder, with like furie, as the roaring waters runne through a lockt river, it strooke away all his Manbrace, and with it cut all the laces off his shield, and made him shake like a lostie Wyne: strooke with an other blast, she gaue her horse the reignes, and quickly turned him befoze the Gyant, settled himselfe, shee let flie at his wounded arme.

This blowe assured her the victorie, for lighting on the vnarmed place, she threw it to the ground, and made him roare horribly: for the wound was mortall. Without payment scaped not the Queene, for ere his soule departed, despairing of life, so mightie a blowe hee discharged on her head, that she fell vpon her horse, voyding much blood from her mouth: with such strength was it executed, that finding no other stay, it drew the Gyant after it, who like a Tower ouerturned with a whirle winde, he fell downe.

Long in accompanying him was not the other, for Floraliza enuying what the Queene had done, so vehemently pursued her Combat, that she tumbled the Gyant at her horses feete, with so many deadly wounds, that he straight gaue his soule vnto the diuell, that long since had expected it.

No longer stay made the other Gyant and knight, but with their Coursers fastest running, prickt against the Ladies, to surprize them vnawares. Dangerous were not the encounters, by reason of their enchanted armor, though they were extreame greuous. Betweene the foure, they began one of the brauest battels on the earth. But at the instant it was disordered: for the knights not respecting their honors, altogether slept to aide their maisters: in no little danger were the ladies, seeing themselves assaulted so many waies: but fetching strength and courage from their amorous breasts, they enacted deeds impossible to Mars his sight.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

He that most vert them was the great Knight, being one of the stoutest in all Paganisme. With him the faire Queene made her battell, thinking by that meanes the victorie was surest. Shee left the beautiful Floraliza with the Gyant, and some twentie knights that were left, but so wounded, that she quickly brought them to twelue. They were all busied in those bloodie affaires, when the braue Assyrian like a thunderbolte galloped along that field towards them: who also had heard the Ladies outcries in the Chariot, and hasting to helpe them, had lost himselfe in the wood, notwithstanding he came in good time, amazed to see so many dead.

He knew the knights, and they him: he entred with his lance about hand: a better blowe was not executed in that battell, for approaching the place where his Ladie fought, strongly brandishing, he threwe it at the Gyant, which penetrating all his steeles places, it appeared at his backe, the pike bloodie with his hearts goze. This blowe was to no small purpose, for it moued a suddain strange alteration in the Ladies breast, iudging so well of him that gaue it, that ouerjoyed with that content, she said to her selfe. Oh most heroicke Knight, would I might satisfie thy desires, and not wrong the Tanacirian. There stayed not the gallant Don Clarissell, for drawing forth Mylos furious sword, he gaue no blowe, but overthrew an enemy dead: close by them went the Ladie, exceeding glad to see him. On horsebacke was the Prince, one of the greatest knights in the world, and so richly armed, no heart could desire more. For all this, ceased not the warlike Lirian Matrone to pursue the great Knight, entering, and retiring with such agillitie, as Mars himselfe, were hee there, could wish no more.

In his countrie was the Pagan accounted the valiantest knowne, wherefore he brauely held out in fight. Of all helpees needed he, combatting with the Queene, both in beautie, and in valour, who flourishing her weapon, stept in with one foote forward, and lay open, that the Pagan might enter: who being exceeding skillfull, perceined her intent, and making her loose two blowes, gaue her two thrusts one after another, which forced her to bow backwards on her horse: as she raised her selfe, with all possible speede hee strooke her on her rich helme, but reacht her onely with the poynt, wherefore the blowe was not to much purpose, though it greued her much.



### The third Booke of the third Part

No Hircanian Tyger was now comparable to the Quene in fury, to see her selfe so viled, she flourish'd her sword, and let it fall so mightily on his head, that it felde him along the saddle, sorely wounded. She trusted to the strength of her Horse, so giuing him the spurres, ranne against her enemy, incountring him so strongly with his breast, that she ouerthrew them both to the ground.

But the Pagan knowing his disgrace, leapt aside, and though weakke and with many wounds, settled himselfe to make his defence against the Quene, that nimbler then an Eagle, leapt from her horse after her pray. Deadly wounded was the Pagan, and no maruell then, if with euery blowe she make him kisse the earth with his handes and knees.

Alreadie were the Louers (though different in affection) rid of all their enemies, and were set to gaze on the battell, when from the top of the mountaine descended a Knight with more brauery then the sun. If careful it was to heare the trampling noyse of his neighing Courser, wheresoeuer he trod. He arrived at the chaire, extreemly abashed to see all his hast had not auailde him. Oh cowardly Prince (said hee) is it possible thou hast shewen thy selfe slow in thy Ladies seruice: thou doest wondrously call thy selfe hers, being the least in ayding her in her greatest distresse. There was hee interrupted, hearing a horrible blowe: which was thus, The Quene noting they all looked on her, iudged it weaknesse longer to continue, and therefore strongly stretching her selfe on her left foote, with both hands laid on the Pagans broken helme such a blow, that diuiding his head downe to the neck, at one instant she ended both his loues and life. And as if she had done nothing, mounted into her seate, and turned about to thanke the Assyrian for his good helpe: whereto he answered. All, and more then this is due to your valour, (most excellent Knight) for where yours and this Knights is, little auailles mine. So thence they went to speak vnto the Ladies in the Chariot, which were Garrofilea, and her belovious daughter Rosaluyra, with two other damzels their attendants, whose beautie made our two Ladies somewhat enuie them. Neuer did any Knight affect with more reason, Lindoriano Prince of Nyquea, who was new come. Well did mother and daughter knowe him, and none like him had the Princesse esteemed. From the heauens may you receiue your deserued recompence (most mightie knights) for the  
succour



## of the Mirroure of Knighthood.

succour you lent me and my daughter (said the cruell Garrofilea:) although considering the dutie by your selues due to the valour of your owne persons, in discharging it, so the immortall powers long since guerdoned it, by imparting so largely their matchlesse gifts with you, making you absolute in all compleate vertues: yet that our ioy may be repleat, and we know to whom we rest bound, we shall account it an exceeding fauor, and remaine debtors together with the former for the same, if you will relate your names and states vnto vs. To which, Archisilora replied. In more then this (soueraigne Queene) doth this knight and my selfe desire to fulfill your will. This knight, poynting at Floraliza, is called the knight of Hope: and my selfe, of the burning flames of Loue: we came together, and therefore know wee not him, to whom we are all so much indebted. Yet more then this must you do at our intreaties, (said the beautilous Rosalaira) and for my sake vnlace your helmes, vnlesse you will cancell the bonds of my indebted loue. There is none but trembles at that word (diuine Ladie) and feares it will bee so (answered the Queene) and therefore for so much as it toucheth me, I wil lose no fauor I may therby reap. Who shall dare do otherwise (said Floraliza) exceeding ioyfull thereat, thinking the spake with her Tynacrian. At once they put off their helms, and being somewhat heated by the battell, there is no beautie comparable to the two Ladies. Oh Prince of Assyria, oh thou hast a heart of Steele to resist this blowe! Many daies it was since hee sawe her, yet presently he acknowledged her to bee the soueraigne of his soule. Haue patience magnanimous Louer, for gainst loues accidents there is no better shield. So like was the Qu. of Lyra vnto the Prince Polliphebo, that Garrofileo assuredly thought shee had her sonne before her, she leapt out of the Chariot with an extazie of ioy, and embracing the Queene, said.

Oh my deare son Polliphebo, may it bee thou shouldst thus long be absent, and not aduertise me of thy aduentures and happie successes, & crueltie more then inhumane it hath been, and were you not son to such a father, I could not beleue it of any, but knowing whose you be, I am assured of your naturall crueltie, which makes mee resemble your tyrannous father. The Queene did straight perceiue Garrofileas deceit, and by her words confirmed the report blazoned of her rigors, she told her of it, & who she was, which not a little admired the beholders, and also when they knew her companion to be a Ladie, a newe the Queene imbraced them, saying.

Pardon



### The third Booke of the third Part

Wardon (soueraigne Ladie) my bolde intreatie, for iudging you to bee the Prince Polliphebo my sonne, hath made me commit this fault. Where hath bene none, vnlesse intended (mightie Queene) replied Archilora, but rather it is a fauour excedding mercie, which I thereby receiued.

By this the faithfull Earle of Modica was arriued with aboue thre hundred knights, and the Ladies vnwilling to be stayed, craued leaue to depart. You will not I am sure so wrong vs (saide the Queene) as to leaue vs absent of your company. We can do no other. Wise (imperious Dame) said Floraliza, for the good successe of the aduenture this Lady and I haue in hand, consisteth in brieue expedition. If it be so (heroicke Ladies) and least you should lose that happie successe, I am content to lose the great content I should reape by your conuersation: wherevpon they kindly embraced and departed, leauing in Tynacria eternal memorie of their beautie and brauery. And whilst Lindariano made his excuse, crauing pardon for his stay: the beauteous Floraliza thus spake vnto Don Clarifell. Wardon mee (sir Knight) for not doing this before, but let our lawfull and brauowed businesse bee our sufficient excuse, although it needs not be giuen to him, that may be assured all happie content is wisht him. Words were these that gaue new life vnto the Louer, nourishing it many yeares with these words.

The Prince taking her by the hand, saide. You haue done mee mightie wrong (most sacred Lady) to intreat him with these wordes, that onely desires to liue perpetually at your obedience. The Lady drew away her hands, not suffering him to kisse them, but casting her armes about his neck, said. He that hath shewed his to be so worthy (heroicke Knight) is iniured to haue mine, but his rather are to be requested for that sacrifice. And inquiring for Forsiana and Don Argante of Phenicia (for they all loued one another like brothers) she tooke her leaue of him, refusing his companie, which with his soule he offered, alleading how it behoued them to go alone. And as one that with admiration gazeth on the splendor of the heauenly Sunne, with his radiant beames illuminating the earth, and on a suddaine sees it dasht with mystie vapors of a blacke clowde, wherewith his light being obscured, blinds and bereaues the poore beholders of his contented sight.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Even so thought the Princely Louer he was left, though glad to see how gently his gentle Lady intreated him. Towardes the sea did the Ladies take their iourney, where they found two Barkes without any to guide them. It was admirable, for so soone as the Quene entred in the one to helpe the Lady in, so swift flies not the arrow loosed from a Steele bow, as of it selfe it lancht into the deepe. In a minute it vanisht out of sight, leauing faire Floraliza so extreame sorrie, that she was about to sling her selfe into the sea, considering what she had lost. What content canst thou hereafter hope for poore Ladie (said the afflicted Dame) being robbed of that good the heauens had imparted thee with her companie? What mayest thou account happie, hauing lost her swete comfortable conuersation? Oh fortune, wouldst thou but waigh how little strength I haue left mee by thy inconstant changes, thou wouldst among so many infortunate happes, mingle one fained pleasure.

She shipt her horse in the other barke, and waighing the anchors that held it to the shoze, lying along vpon the hatches of the same, she committed his gouernment to Neptunes' mercie. Yet it was not so ill looked too, but the enuious Lupercio had taken charge of it, who by all possible meanes assembled all the mightiest knights in the Hauen of Nyquea, to transport them thence vnto the marvellous Tower: for he had alreadie knowne, there should bee a knight would win Theseus armoz, and his battell-axe, wherewith the inchauntment should be ended: and knowing he was an enemye procured to get and bring these so valiant knights on his side, and therefore did he guide Floralizas Barke, who on the fourth day of her Nauigation, met with her brother Don Cellindo, with whom she fought a most cruell combat, which for breuity is not recited: but being known for her brother, he entred into her Bark, and were directed towards Nyquea, meeting continually all their voyage on the seas, infinit Galleis and Shippes, as well Chyistians as Pagans: where beeing arriued, wee must leaue them a while, to remember Rosabell, whom we haue long wronged with forgetfulnesse.

CHAP.



# The third Booke of the third Part

## CHAP. X.

What happened to the most valiant *Rosabell*, departed from *Gracia* in the company of a Ladie.



With some græfe of minde (faire Ladies) left wee *Rosabell*, to see him selfe absent from the sweete company of his deare *Oristoldo*, and armourlesse with the *Damzell* was he shipt in the doubtfull Seas, yet knew not whither: some comfort was it to him, seeing hee had not all his armes, to haue the sword that erst belonged to *Hector*. He inquired of the *Damzell* the cause why with such speed shee hastened his departure. For none other (sir knight) replied the *Damzell*, but to see one of the fairest Ladies in the greatest danger in the world, and knowing that onely in your presence rests her remedie: and in the least delay, the greatest death that euer befell to any, is sure on her. For know (most valiant knight) that in the kingdome of *Tentoria*, there is a Lady no lesse beautifull, then adorned with all good qualities and graces of the minde. Shee was and is beloued of all her subiects, because they know that chastitie & beautie holds in her one equall degree of soueraigntie. Through the onely fame of her perfections, with her the mightie *Dardario* fell in loue, who was said to be the valiantest Gyant in the vniuerse. Hee with a puissant host came vnto her land, though peaceably: with him hee brought a sonne vnknichted, for his yeares did not allow it, who became farre mightier then his father. He sent his Ambassadors to our Quene, to let her know of his coming and demaund, which was to marrie her.

A thousand times was my Lady about to slay her selfe, to auoyde a match so vnequall. She called a Councell of her Nobilitie: who resolved to withstand him with fierce warre, by reason there were many valiant knights that would lose their liues to defend their Queen and countries safetie: for although they sawe the Gyant come with signes of peace, yet doubting the worst, had gathered a great armie of men, because they would not be suddainly surprised.

There



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

There were many voyces among them, that the Quēen should marrie him, being Lord of al the Isles in the Adriaticke Sea. But in the ende, most part agrēd, they should rather die with honour in fieldes, then for feare suffer such a marriage. Eight daies respite had the Gyants giuen them for their aunswere. In which time the beauteous Syrinda commending her affaires vnto the Gods, and her wit, she resolued on the greatest deed that ever Ladie did imagine. Shee acquainted it with her Captaines and Councell of warre, which are the chiefest Lords in her land: and this it was. That she would seeme to consent to his desire, and that she durst undertake in the night of her wedding day, to giue the Gyants head vnto her Knights, who should be in readinesse to issue vpon their enemies, whose vanquishment would be easie, being with the Feasts carelesse and vnarmed. Almost all the Councell approued my Ladies deuise, and praying the immortall Gods to giue her good successe therein, they aduertised the Gyants thereof, that with extreame ioy was almost besides himselfe. All his subiects laying by their armes, with gallant shewes welcommed her aunswere. Two daies after, the proude Dardaria entred the Cittie with his sonne Abstrusio, whom hee begot on a strong Gyantesse, and so issued like his Parents. He onely carried his bigge Cemitoz at his side, accompanied with two Knights richly adozned, and himself in robes of inestimable valor, with a triple crowne on his head, worth a kingdome, with Princely bzauerie was he entertained by the dissembling Syrinda, whom the fierce pagan embraced with the greatest content in the world, thinking himselfe in heauen, seeing the Ladies exceeding beantie: who with a thousand fained loue toyes imueigled the disarmed Gyant.

The desired night being come, which was eternall to the Pagan, and supper ended, hee was most sumptuously brought to his bedde: where the Lady faining some modest shame to be seene naked, so long deferred her going to bedde, that the force of the many meates and wine, forced him into a sound sleepe. Hee neuer more awaked: for the Lady seeing her aduantage, drew forth a sharpe two edged Dagger, which she thrice stabbed in his brutish bzeast, pearcing his heart therewith. Now that the couragious Dame was assured of his death, she bzauely cut off his head, and presently gaue it to those knights shee had appoynted to expect it.



### The third Booke of the third Part

They tooke it, extreameely ouertoyed, and conueyed the Queene and Ladies out of the Pallace, for feare of some danger that might happen the next day. With great desire they expected his comming, whereon scarce had the Sunne sent forth his messengers of mozne, when an alarme was sounded thzough all the Citie: they of the Campe without, thinking it was in honour of the Nuptialls, replied with all their military Instruments. In an instant were aboue fittie thousand men Armed, whereof five thousand assaulted the Pallace, leaving none aliue that with Dardario came, except his haughtie sonne, that hearing the noyse, ranne forth with one of the bedde postes, making such pitifull slaughter that none durst assault him. He got some weapons of those that were slaine, wherewith his deeds are incredible. But being alone, and by so many thousands assaulted, his death was certaine: which the sturdie youth perceiuing, got vnto the Camp: where being come, he found it so disordered and so many sayle, and the rest so affrighted, that he could scant meete with any that might tell him the cause of so great euil: in the ende hee came to knowe it with such great griefe, as he was about to kil himselfe: his fathers Armour he put on, and the first he met guirded him his sword. The fury that possessed the youth when he sawe his fathers head pearched on a pole vpon the highest Turret of the Citie, cannot most (valiant Knight) be credited. Hee went forth into the fielde roaring like a Bull, and killing without mercy: but his force was to small purpose, for all his Army was discomfited, and the Queenes subiects behaued themselves so well, that ere the day was halfe spent, they had put the better thze parts of their foes to the sword, and gaue chase to the rest euen to their shippes, wherein soze wounded, as many as could imbarke themselves, and among them the mightie Abstrutio, purposing with newe powers to returne, and with fire and sword to destroy our kingdome. In his he arriued, where his intent he presently put in execution, not without griefe, to see that of fortie thousande men his father had carried with him, he had returned backe againe scarce five thousand. The Paganne spoyles left all our lande exceeding rich: and our Queene with the greatest Honour that euer Lady obtained. Notwithstanding the great triumphes made for so happie victorie, yet would they not liue carelesse of their safetie: but euery day mustred & trained their souldiers, and strengthening all their garrisons with



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

with the best men in the land, because they would not lose what was obtained for want of discipline, being assured the sonne would come to reuenge the fathers death: whose body was cast out for food vnto the byrdes and beasts. But now (Magnanimous Knight) returning to our purpose, the murdered Gyant had in his owne Pallace my Ladies liuely counterfeite, which he had caused to be made, when hee first became enamoured of her.

This being left at home, came to his sonnes hands, which daily frequenting, and the helpe of his tender yeares, with continuall consideration of the content, which to be beloued of so faire a Lady would yelde: kindled such a fire in his bzeast, that he could in nothing delight saue in contemplation of Syrindas bewtie, whose loue so opprest him, as it bereft him of his best sences, and diminished his health. He resolved to passe vnto Tentoria, and colourably procure alone, what his father with so many men had mist. He was not of shape and feature nothing so deformed as his Syze, but certainly farre stronger, and higher he is a handfull then any knight, being no Giant. Arriued in my Ladies countrey, he brought in his company eight knights, his neare Allies, of no lesse force then himselfe. Disguised he entred the Citie, where the Queene kept her Court, and knowing that she vled to walke abroade vnto a neare adioyning Groue, he watcht his time, and hauing opportunitie one day, followed her, took her, and setting her before him on his horse, carried her away, not doing nor offering her any discourtesie, though she had most cruelly slaine his father: he tolde her his desire, desiring her not to refuse his marriage, since all the world knew how much it honoured her to do it. Whereto she answered.

If like a good knight (most cruell Abstrusio) thou haddest procured my good will, it had not bene much I had yelded to thy request: but since thou hast employed thy force vpon a poore weake Lady, I will rather bee my owne murtherer, then consent to any such thing.

Why then (said the louer) that thou mayest know what assured confidence you may repose on my strength, and arme, Ile giue thee leaue for sixe moneths space to send and seeke about for that knight, whose fame aboue al others shal memorise his deeds, to be the greatest with whom hand to hand Ile Combat about thee: prouing, that none but I merits thy bewtie: so that if I proue Conquero, thou take mee for thy husband, with willing and blythe minde: but if I be conque-



### The third Booke of the third Part

red, I vow and protest by all I may, to remit and release any action I may pretend of marriage towards thee: for which cause, and that the battle may be effected, Ile set thee free with all pleasure to enjoy thy libertie, and this because thou shalt not doubt I wil deny the Combat, or violate my word. Somewhat pacified was the imprisoned Ladie hearing the Pagans offer, and considering that was her best, agreed thereto. Which gladdened the Pagans verie soule, supposing himselfe sure of the Lady, thinking none able to take her by that meanes from him. While these things pass, newes were thither brought of the neuer dying hono: ye had obtained in the Iousts of Grecia, ending them to your immortal glozie. Whereupon my Ladie thought to none safer then to you, this dangerous aduenture could be recommended, because the strong Abstrasio is the valiantest in all those parts. She put me in trust with this businesse, being from a childe brought up in her service, which I promised to performe with all diligence: and either lose my life, or let you knowe the necessitie wherein I left her, trusting that a knight so absolute in all excellencies, would be pitiful, lending his help bound by lawes of knighthood, to a distressed Lady: and let not my report of the Gyants strength, put any doubt in your unconquered brest: for having on your part the strong shield of Justice, it wil be sufficient to giue you the eternal hono: of so glorious a Conquest.

This is the cause braue knight, that hath from such remoted countries brought me to seeke you, and consider whether my iourney be not lawful, and your liberal offer iust. It is (kind damzel) and am much amazed at y Gyants tyzennie (said the Prince) to force the Lady against her wil to marry him: and wold I were already with him, that (Lady) you might know your Queenes remedie if it lie in me, is made voyde for want of power, and not wil to hazard my person in her service: and my life I wil aduenture in any danger, to right the wrong and violence she doth sustaine. Why then braue knight (said she) I may goe merry, seeing you so willingly affected to my businesse, and may the Goddes giue you the due merits your bounteous care deserueth: and seeing that for my Lady you must undertake such a fight, she sends you Armo: and Horse conuenient to cope with such an aduersary. She drew forth the Armo: which were indeed as she said, and excepting his of Hector, he neuer sawe better: of colour they were purple, crell with sanguine barres, garnished with some flowers of rich glistering stones, which more adozned them.

The



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

The Greeke put them on, which fitted him as they were made by his measure. On his shield was brauely figured the pictures of Justice and Chastitie embracing, and ouer their heads this motto.

Vpon each other both relies,  
(Twinnes) kil one, the other dies.

This deuice greatly pleased the Prince, because it iumpt with his businesse. With these armes was gallant Rosabel armed in, neither in these affaires nor the thought of his hoped battel, forgetting his Lyriana, whose absence not a litle greued him, for none had lost such hapinesse in loue as he, with so many sighes obtained, and so his sorowe was tollerable, losing so great good, for none will greue at a losse, if the cause be not respected. Not meeting any aduenture woorthy memory, he arriued at the Ile wherereof Abstrusio was king. Straight leapt he on shooze, mounting a mightie roane courser, which the needy Dame had sent him: then which he neuer bestridde a better, his Bolladoz, excepted. The Damozel masked her selfe, for feare of being knowne by any of those that brought her away, when the Princeesse was stolen. They approched very neare the Citie, where the fierce king made his abode. It was admirable, chiefly the Castle, where the king kept his court, which seemed inexpugnable, both by nature and situation of the place. About it, were many pleasant Groues and Meades, where the Pagan often recreated himselfe with Syrinde: who by continuall conuersing with the Pagan, his valour and gallant disposition, had exceedingly mollified her obduracy. And Lyrgandeo saith shee, had repented her selfe for sending her damozel to seeke any by force to plead her cause, being to her honoz to take him for her husband, that was able to protect both kingdomes, that vnited was one of the mightiest in the world. The like imagination had stirred the Greekes thoughts, thinking that he being so far different from the condition of others, his marriage much aduanced her. On this considered he, along the Chyistal Current of a bubling streame, when the mightie Abstrusio walked on the other side, armed in strong plates of Steele, bare headed without helme, to take the coleress of the fresh ayre: onely two knights without armor, attended him, bearing his: who was horsed on a furious Courser, his sight greatly pleased the Prince, for his damozel knowing him, told it Rosabel.



### The third Booke of the third Part

At his right hand rode the beautilous Syrinda, on a milke-white Palfrey: she was gallantly attyred, for being well intreated by the king, she by doing the like, did moze allure him, and he lost nothing by vsing her in that manner, forcing her to do nothing against her will, which to his soueraigne gentlenesse, may be attributed. Comming moze neare the Lady, knew the Armoz and horse which she sent vnto the Knight shuld combat for her. She was so amazed (though his disposition greatly contented her) that the stoute Pagan noted it, and demanding the cause, halfe trembling told it.

Oh Iupiter (said the Pagan) how doest thou shew thy immortall power to honour me, sending him at such time hither, whom I heartily expected? Now shal you see faire Lady, whether my valour deserue not some estimation in thy best, beeing so neare to see it by experience. So daunted was the Lady, that she could not answer, reuoluing many things in her thoughts against her selfe: for if she should stay the battel from proceeding, it were to dishonour the knight, hauing sent for him so far, onely to that: and if she suffered it, then she imagined she wronged her Louer towards the Pagan: so that she was set between two contraries, altogether opposed against her happinesse, and which shee might iudge the least to lay hands on, she knew not. The hastie comming of the Greeke suffered her not to chuse, for crossing the riuer ouer a bridge, brandishing his Launce, went towards the Louers that greatly admired his comely grace.

The Pagan nothing doubting his hoped victorie, expected him in a faire plain, ioyning to a thicket of tall Wyndes, called the Croue of Aduentures, for neuer any entred it, but found something to try the valour of his person. The Greeke being come to him raised his Beauer, and saluted him thus. God saue the valiant Abstrasio: I thinke I shall not neede to relate the cause of my comming, because it was with thy consent: neuerthelesse, if without battell thou wilt remit the sute thou doest pretend, thou shalt obtaine a sure vnconstant friend: for I doubt not, but thou knowest how it stains a Noble minde, by force to force a Ladies will, for it neither belongeth to a good knight nor a true Louer: yet for all this, if thou wilt insist in thy enterprize, let vs no longer deferre the combat, which instantly to be done, will bee too long.

While he spake, the Pagan stedfastly gazed on him, and iudging him



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

him of great strength, because his constitution was not much lesse then his owne, and this imagination he confirmed, noting the libertie of his words, which he said proceeded of valour, for others at his sole sight, were ready to tremble. So he answered. In faith (Sy2 knight) I see no reason but any thing should be done to obtain your friendship, which ought not be litle esteemed by him that hath it. But you see if I leaue the battell, it rebounds to my dishonour: for it will be said, I did it for feare, which could neuer yet be reported, since I knew what armourment: so now to giue occasion of such speech, he wil not permit that knowes the estimation of true honour, and how it ought to be embraced. So let our battle be presently, although I assure you, moze then this, I neuer doubted the ende of any: witnesses we shall need none, for my promise past to this faire Princesse shall be sufficient. It is so (replied the Greke) for since y<sup>e</sup> one must of necessitie sacrifice his blood in this field, let the suruiuer be Conqueroz & Judge to carrie away the Lady. Who came to speake vnto the knight, so amazed, that the Greke conceived the cause, and quickly assured himselfe thereof. It gladded him, purposing if he vanquishd, to marrie her to the Pagan. Defied eache other had these combatants, and sought for a conuenient place to make the battell, when from the thicket issued a knight vpon a nimble Coueler: he did no moze but take viewe of the number that was there, and returned.

Euery one noted him, and mused what he intended by such haste. But the desire the two had of their Combat, made them forget him. They turned their fierce horses about, whose successe an other Chapter must unfold: for it deserueth much moze.

### CHAP. XI.

The aduenture that befell vnto the two most mightie warriors, being in their combat, and what else happened.

**V**With a thousand amorous doubtles, the belueteous Syrinda expected the two braue warriors encounters, greatly fearing the Greke, because she sent for him, and the Pagans successe, good or badde, shee felt in middelt of her soule: and eythers blowes shee receiued on her best. So that deare (Ladies) neuer had Com-  
battants



### The third Booke of the third Part

battants a moze suspicious Judge: because she through loue, pleades the merits of the one: and the Greekes worthinesse, the bountie wherewith he undertooke her cause, inforced her to defend him. Oh (sacred Damzels, Natures cheefest bewties) lend me some little fauour, that I may worthily relate the rarest single Combat fought vpon the earth: for the one is Rosabel, of whom the world already trembles: the other, the haughtie Abstrusio, mirror of the Pagan Nations. The nimble swiftnesse of their horses, was occasion of their quicker meeting, making moze noyse in their carrier, then Vulcans forged fire rattling through the skies, renteth his passage, flashing among the darkened Cloudes. Big and knottie were their Launces, but incountring with their steeled shields, they seemed of slender willowes: whose shuters mounted so high, that their sight gaue notice of that Combat aboue the fourth spheare. Neither miscarried by the thocke, though both warriours were assured of the others strength. Amazed was the Pagan, seeing his aduersary in his saddle, for in all his life til then, he neuer incountred any but he ouerthrew him to y hard ground. The Greeke drew forth the Trojan Hectors sword, glad to see the Pagans valour. And flourishing it aloft with that celeritie he vsed in all his battles, let flie at the Pagan: who turned to warde it, yet his diligence preuailed not, for he had not scarce offered his defence, when the skilful Greeke redoubled the strength of his proffered blowe, and brauely discharged it on his aduersaries shielde, it botes not to be of fine tempered Steele, for all it reached was throlne to the grassy plaine. Sometimes would they proffer aduantages, as in a schole of fence is accustomed, which would redownd vnto the offerers disadvantage, as now it befel the Greek Prince. For spurring his horse, he wold haue giuen the Sarracen another blow before he settled himselfe: he did so, but the vnbrideled fury of the horse, most fiercely ranne beyond the Pagan, whose course Rosabell on a sudden staying, the plaine being wet, his hinder feete slipt, so that both headlong stumbled downe. Galtenor saith the Greeke, lost not his saddle: but Lirgandeo affirmeth it: adding, that his fall was the cause he performed one of his vsual acts: for being on his feete, in a drie place he awaited.

The Pagan comming, that eagerly ranne to ouerthrow him: his Horse he would not kil, but meeting best with best, with no lesse force then Mars himselfe, hee made both Master and horse recoyle  
backe



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

backe in such a maze, that hee had time to follow the Pagan, and cast his armes about him. He was so quicke in performing it, that he had almost pitcht the Spant on his head. So Syrindas Louer fearing some euill successe, was inforced to do the like, and shaking the stirropes from his feet, suffered the Grecke to pull him off: who so mightily snatcht him from his seate, that he tumbled him on the ground: but closer doth not the Iune incomparse about a molle begrowne Tower, then the Pagan embraced the Brittanicke youth, so that both fell grouelling on the earth, where rising, they beganne a most gallant wzaſtle, vsing so many flights and trickes, that the God of battelles could no more desire.

And so their wzaſtle falling out at the beginning of their fight, it longer continued, either procuring some aduantage to get ground of his aduersarie. Neuer were they in more danger then now. Along while strided they thus, till wearie of grappling, wzaſting forth their armes, flung themselves strongly the one from the other, with such admiration of those that beheld them, as they beleened not what they saw. Highly did the Ladie esteeme the Grecke, seeing him so brauely maintaine himselfe against him that was famous to bee the valiantest in all the Adriaticke Isles, who on his owne behalfe greatly misdoubted, iudging his aduersitie the mightiest in the world. Now keepe they no order, nor nothing procure they more then death, or eternall honour by conquest of his aduersarie. One of the worldes best swords was the Greckes, being at Venus instant request tempered for the Troian, wherefore he neuer stroke blow but it fetcht blood, cut armour and flesh. And he himselfe receiued them nothing inferior, and though they drew blood through the defence of his armour and dexteritie, yet they bruised his flesh in greuous manner. The Pagan at this time assaulted his aduersarie, thinking with that blow to assure the victorie. But Trebatios kinsman, that was in all things his superior, by stepping aside auoyded it, letting him fiercely passe on, so turning after him, the Grecke discharged his rage on the others wasse, in two he had cleft him, had he giuen the blow with good ayne, yet it put the Pagan in great paine: who for all that, recouering himselfe, at once confronted each other: most mightie were the blowes that fell on their helmes, either drew his sword besmeared with the others blood, and with the force of the stroke they set their hands on the earth.



### The third Booke of the third Part

The Bræke did first rise, being longer winded, and ere his foe was settled in his broken shield, he gaue him such a blowe, that cutting a great peece off it, descended on the shoulder, where it lighted so heauily, that his knees were forced to the ground: Close he would, thinking to ouerthrow the Pagan. But this bolde attempt had like to haue cost him his life: for the fierce Abstrutio being verie nimble, and seeing him come vnadvisedly, he set his sword betwene him, on which the Prince running, felt the point in his fleshe, whereat staying, he gaue backwards, else it had pierced a passage for his life.

Here mist he his good Armoz, attributing the fights continuance vnto the want of them. He turned fiercer then a sauadge Beare vpon the Pagan, who by that was on foote, laying on him so many more fall blowes, that quickly some aduantage was discerned on Rosabels side: but it was such as often his aduersary hazarded his hopes of conquest: for the Pagan seeing how it concerned him, did from his wounds drawe strength, both to defend and offend: which yet made the event of the battle seem doubtfull: wherein the warriors were eager and greedie one of the others ouerthrowe, that they spied not till they were almost surpris'd, who issued out of the Grove: they were foure mightie deformed Gyants, with aboue an hundred knights, who knowing the Pagan, pursued him for reuenge, by reason of their fathers death, by his, which they deferred til they might take him at some aduantage from his Court.

Well did the haughtie Bræke guesse at their intent, noting the manner of their comming: wherefore vsing his accustomed magnanimitie, said to Abstrutio. Leane we our battle in this estate sir knight, for I repose such trust in your person, as when farther occasion shall permit, you wil ende it: and now procure we to defend the Princesse from these knights, whose hastie comming seemes not for peace. It cannot be exprest how the Princes words gladded the Pagan, who replied. Your pleasure be fulfilled (Sir knight) for henceforth I yeld to you the victorie of this battle, because farre more your magnanimous bonatie deserueth. So both recounted on their horses. For the Gyants arriuall brake off their speeches. The knights were attired after the Parthian maner, with bowes and arrowes, which like a shower of raine they let flie at the two knights, who felt some of them in their fleshe through their armoz.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

To shunne this furie, the Lady was forced to leape from her Balfray, which she had no sooner done, but one of the Gyants with twentie knights tooke her vp, and in great haste spurred away. At the outcries she made, her Louer saue her, and considering his losse, losing her, said.

Now (most haughtie Knight) must you extend the utmost of your valour, against these vilde villaines, whilst I pursue the robber of my ioy, for without her I desire no life. Do so (vraue Knight) replied the Greeke, for it is reason you should. And I by shedding my hearts deare blood, shall but satisfie my bounden dutie due to the Lady. Away like the winde in swiftnesse departed the Pagan, leauing Rosabell in the greatest perill in the world: but he was borne to indure them, and encouraging himselfe being alone, couragiously he thrust his horse among that treacherous people. Neuer did Reaper in Haruest season, with more desire enter his sharpe sickle in the yallow ripe corne, then with furie Lyrianas Louer prest among those knights, bereauing some of armes, some of liues, and others wounded to the death, some hee cleft downe right, and some hee parted at the waste in two: thirtie knights had the Greeke slaine, and wounded many, ere any of the Gyants could at full giue him one blow; so at length one of them preased to him, egerly to execute his wrath: but in the encounter, he opposed himselfe with death. For although he wounded the Greeke on the shoulder, yet he not respecting the others blowes, he cast his shield at his backe, and though vnadvisedly he spurred against the Gyant with his sword raised in both hands, it fell on his thicke helme, which vnable to resist, it was with the head cleft in the midst to the necke, felling him downe at his horse fete.

So great was the Ire that posselt the knights, seeing their Gyant slaine, that vnder him they slew the Greeces horse. Now hee was in no lesse daunger then of his life: for being on foote, they all ranne to auerturne him with their horses: some defence found hee behinde the heape of dead knights, which was nothing, had not fortune hither brought the Tynacrian Polliphebo, flower of Chivalrie: who hauing past many stormes in the seas, the heaues for eithers good, did cast him on that shoze, directing him thither at such time as he might succor his cousin, who like Mars himselfe behaned him, for hauing slaine another of the suruiuing Gyants horses, in the fall he tooke from him an



### The third Booke of the third Part

Iron Pate that hung at the saddle bowe, the which at that instant serued him better then his sword, for with it hee reached moze out at length. The Tynacrian blest himselfe to see a knight of such force: he iudged him to be a Greeke, for in them consisted the worldes strength: he said neuer a word, but with his launce aboue hand, like a fierce comet entred among them, killing aboue tenne befoze he brake it. Hee would needs rid the knight from the Gyant that remained on horsebacke: so drawing forth his sword, went to him, and taking it twixt both handes, raised himselfe on his stirropes, and finding the Gyant carelesse of him, executed the brauest blow that in all that day was giuen (for he discharged his sword on his middle, higher hee could not reach) in so braue a manner, that from thence downward hee left on horsebacke, tumbling the other halfe at Rosabels feete, that with the noyse of the fall turned about, and seeing a deed so extraordinarie, could not but a lowde say thus.

Ohy mightie Iupiter, what vnmatcht incomparable strength is this? He looked on his deuise, yet knew it not, for he had neuer befoze seene it: but desirous to let him see what he beleened, slept with his left foote forward, closed with the Gyant that vnmmercifully laide on him, and strongly firming himselfe on the ground, with both hands discharged his sword on his shoulder, which effected such a blowe, as it was doubted whether of the two the God of warre inured: for all that part downe to his legges he cut away: and like an Eagle leapt on a horse that was neare him.

Neither of the kinsmen spake to the other, leauing it till better oportunie, but thrust themselves among that miserable rowte, & greeued they were so seue whereon to shewe their valour. In lesse then an houre were the two warriours left alone, yet mought it well bee said, in them consisted the most part of humane power. Togither they put off their helmes, discovering their beautie admired, able to haue slaine Apollos in his glorie.

They were almost of one age, so Rosbell first spake: Most mightie knight, the best that euer mine eyes beheld, make me meritorious, to know to whom I am bound for my life: for to your happie comming, when I accounted it lost, must I attribute my now enioying it. Whereto the Tynacrian answered. Excellent and most renowned warriour, there was so little neede of my helpe in presence of



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

of your valour, as I desire no thanks for any thing done, being solely due to the strength of your arme: for if I presumed to the attempt of any deede, it was onely to haue the fruition of your swete presence, which bindes me to tell you who I am. Although there want in mee sufficient merits to equall me in valour, to deserue the name of brother to the Emperour Alphebo, & Rosicler the most glorious knight of Cupid: I am Polliphebo of Tyuaria, sonne to Queene Garrofileo, and the Emperour Trebatio, and I arriued at Greece, with desire to make my selfe knowne vnto my Lord the Emperour, though I am assured he is displeased with my cruell mother. The ioy cannot be expessed, which Rosabell conceived, seeing him whose fame had filled the earth with immortall honour. He embraced him with these words.

In faith (heroicke Prince) I may hereafter thinke my selfe the happiest knight aliue, thzough the knowledge of such an vncle: for know (though my deeds deserue it not) I am your cousin Rosabel, of great Brittain, sonne to Rosicler, and the Princesse Oliua, and he that nothing moze desired then to know you. With exceeding content the Tynacrian embraced him.

Oh vnerpected happinesse, is it possible such goodnesse was in a land so remote, reserued for me? What may I hope for that will not befall me, since fortune hath so luckily begunne my good, acquainting mee with one of the puissant Emperour Trebatios kinsmen? I doo protest (most excellent Prince) this day shall so be imprest within my memorie, that first euery bytall power shall abandon their naturall nation, ere I will forget the remembrance of this present content, caused by the knowledge of so warlike a cousin: & be assured (deare Rosabel) that seeing you are the first I haue knowne of my kindred, so you shall alwaies be in all things: for I will neuer obey any with moze willingnesse.

He performed it better then he spake it, for neuer cousins loved one another moze, nor Rosabell esteemed none of his Uncles as hee did the Tynacrian. Quickly did Fortune or Nabatos power, (thzough the Dacians intercession, whom hee accounted as his child) separated them: for the Creek telling his cousin why he came from Greece, and the necessitie Abstruso might be in, forced them as quicke as any thought to seeke the Louers.

But



## The third Booke of the third Part

but being ouertaken by the nights approach, and they following their haste, lost one another in the wood, which so greeued either of them, as they were readie for græse to yeeld their selues: and surely they had fallen into some danger, (for they had ingendred the greatest affection that can be imagined) had not the wise man comforted them, al- leading how needfull their parting was. So he returned the Tynacrian to his damzell, and launching his Barke into the deepe seas, we leave him, returning to the Greeke.

### CHAP. XII.

How Rosabell met with *Abstrusio*, fighting with them that had stolen his Ladie. How hee ayded him: and after, how he suffered shipwracke on the seas.



With some comfort giuen by the wise man, did Rosabel Prince of great Brittaines hast his iourney, ioying in the knowledge of the Tynacrian prince his Uncle: & thousand thanks gaue he the heauens, for beeing allied to kinsmen of such might. Till midnight did he gallope seeking for *Abstrusio*, wishing in heart he might arrive in good time to lend him his aide: herein would Fortune seeme to fauor him, for euen when faire Endyminos loue shined fairest, then heard he a noyse of blowes and armes clashing. Lighter then a young wanton Goate, spurred hee thitherward, and entring into a spacious field, hee sawe Syrindeas mightie Louer, like a new Mars among his aduerse Knights. Hee stood a while gazing on him, glad to see such haughtie strength, and iudged him worthe of the Ladies brauerie. He assayed them saying. To them, to them braue Knight, for their owne weaknesse shall heere confound them.

The Greeces couragious words did greatly incourage him, whom knowing, he humbled himselfe for his good helpe: the which hee not a little needed, for at that instant aboue two hundred knights vnder the leading of a Captaine Gyant, came marching dole along the field against the Pagan: this Gyant was king and Lord ouer them all: the furie which they brought, made the Greke feare the losing of the Lady, whom



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

whom he intreated seeing her on foote, to get vp to the toppe of the hil, and hid her selfe among the trees, whither hee would quickly followe her.

She did so: kindly requesting the Greeke to looke vnto the safetie of Abstrasio. It greeued him not to heare her tender speech, purposing to marrie them if he could. Then like a thunderbolt hee turned on his enemies: and with Abstrasio ranged vp and downe among them, dyed to the chinne in aduerse blood, and thogh the Pagan were somewhat wearie with the many battelles of that day, yet the sight of the Greekes braue deedes, so animated his fainting heart, that hee forgot his wounds, and their paine.

Such miserable destruction on the hard rypened corne, makes not the ouerflowing of an vnstayed current passing his limits, as the two warriours on those coward knights, giuing no blow in vaine, but slew outright, or for euer maimed: which it behoued them so to do, beeing onely two, and their enemies so many. Followe mee braue knight, (said the Greeke) for ere we part from hence, I vow to be reuenged on these base villaines. Do what you will (most mightie warriour) answered he, for I obey. His shield he cast at his backe, and tooke his sword twixt both handes, beginning to execute such deedes as Mars would not attempt.

More feared was not Hercules among the Centaures, then Rosabell of his enemies, that beating them downe on euery side, at length he met with the Gyant that stole the Ladie, whom he assailed with a terrible blowe, and past on, where the Pagan stayed him till he returned, when with both handes hee discharged his sword on his thicke helme, whereon the famous Trojans blade finding no resistance, made his head a good way to skip from his neck. This pleased him not, so that aboue tenne lost their liues in the conflict: for repairing thither, it was as much as to be ledde to the slaughter house. By this, the Larke the mornings Herald, mounting into the loftie ayrie skies, beganne to sing the daies approach, welcomming bright Phoebus to the East, when the two warriours like two fire meteors of heauens consuming wrath, ranging about the battell, encountred in the ende (wearie of killing) with the chiefe and sole suruyor of the Gyants, who roving like a Lyon for his pray, seeking them, met, and with them his death: for stepping betweene them, with a heauie Iron mace thought to reuenge himselfe at two blowes.



### The third Booke of the third Part

It fell out otherwise, for the furious Greeke with one stroke cut alway halfe his shield, and sorely wounded him. Heere did Abstrusio bzaue, by second him, though it cost him deare, for thrusting himselfe vnder the Gyants armes, although hee thrust a handfull of his sword in the side of his brest, yet did the Gyant execute his blowe, discharging it on the top of his helme, so fearcelly, that sencelesse it strooke him along vpon his horse. At the noyle the Greeke turned about, and thinking his companion dead, no Hyrcanian furie may be compared to him. With more eagerneesse furiously flies not the lowzing Eagle against the spoiler of his nest, as the Greeke to be reuenged. Againe would the Gyant raise his Pace, when with incomparable strength with one blowe did Rosabell throw downe his armes and club: and with a thrust going to runne through the Gyant, he turned aside, making the Greeke strike his head against his brest, with more strength he embraced him, then Hercules, when twixt his hands he crusht to death two serpents: yet it auailed him not, wanting one arme: for the Greeke drawing forth his dagger, terminated that warre with two cruell stabbs. Dead tumbled downe one of the mightiest Gyans of all those Isles, whose father lost his life by the hand of the great Dardario, & the sonne pursuing his iust reuenge, sacrificed his blood with honour, being bereft by the Greeke Prince: who fearing to leese Abstrusio, did execute more then humane deeds.

Better was not the Hesperian fruite kept, before Aleydes spoiled it, then Rosabell defended the sounded Pagan, offending his enemies on all parts so lamentably, that woe was to him that approached to trie the effect of his hands: even as one awaked from a deepe slumber, so amazedly the Pagan raised himselfe, and remembryng the state wherein hee was, and what the Greeke had done for him, said to himselfe.

Oh Iupiter, let me liue, that I may gratifie this knight, what his deeds on my behalfe haue deserued. The furious bzaue where with he behaued himselfe, so animated the stout Lover, that as if but then the warre beganne, he beganne to turne himselfe among them, to the deare cost of many liues. So Rosabell spurring his horse away, said.

Follow me knight, for our fighting now is to no more purpose, the drawing of the mornings brightnesse comming on so fast, may make



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

make vs lose the Ladie. The Dagan followed him, for whom the Greeke helved out such ample passage, as hee could reach to effect no blow. They galloped through the thickest of the troupes, leaving behinde them the cruellest slaughter that euer was done by two knights. They arrived to the hill where the Lady was, there they dismounted to speake to her: who full of ioy (guided by Loue) embraced the Dagan, thanking him for his kinde carefull rescue. She on the instant perceived her committed error, but could not salue it: for Lyrianas skilfull Louer, straight iudged the cause, and being glad thereof, knowing the Dagens will, and considering of the signes which the Ladie had shewen of her affection towardes him, saide to trie what would come of it.

Now is the time (sir knight) to end our former battell, that I may right the Ladie which hath called me from so farre countries. Both Louers were moued by the Greeces wordse, but passing that fitte, and waighing what he had done, Abstrusio thus replied. Oh Ioue forsende (braue knight) that seeing you haue so often saued my life this day, I should now imploy it against your seruice. The glorie and victorie of the fight is yours: and moze then it deserues your valor, which the heauens haue imparted you: and though it bee moze then hell for me to liue without this soueraigne Ladie, so I may seeme gratefull to your deseruings, my selfe shall force my selfe to forgoe this happinesse, which is the onely nourisher of my forlorne life.

Worthie the honour of your high merits (excellent knight) hath this your answer beene (said Rosabell) and I doe in heart wish my faint wordes were now equal to my will, that I might (were it but in part) pay the great bonds your liberall bountie hath bound me in: and since this Ladie is now enfranchised and free, I am readie (as I promised her Damzell) to conduct her to her kingdome, or where else she please. Whereto she spake. Euer since (sir knight) my fortunes made mee need your helpe, I put my honour in your hands, and so I am sure you wil (considering my necessitie) protect it, in lieu whereof, I vow obedience to all your commaunds.

It fittes so ill (faire Syrinda) with my conditions, (spake the Greeke) to guard Ladies, as the experience I haue of my owne misfortunes, enforceth mee refuse this charge, leaving it in the hands of this mightie knight, professing, that if I had a sister, and  
D 2
with



### The third Booke of the third Part

with her many kingdomes, I would commit her to none other. And seeing you haue so plainly heard my will, I expect your reply according to yours, that hereafter I may serue Ladies after a new manner. I knowe not whether of the two were moze ioyed with the Princes words, but the Ladie with the accustomed bashfulnesse in such cases, thus replied.

It well appeares (sir knight) you would by all good waies procure my good will to accomplish yours. But that you may see, there is in me no lesse acknowledgement of your deserts, then in this knight, for what on my behalfe you haue performed, I once againe submit my selfe to your order, to dispose of him at your content, assured that a knight of your worth, wil regard my pure honour as your owne: for hauing put my selfe in your hands, the lawes of knighthood binds mee to it. The Greeke did highly (as reason would) esteeme what the Ladie did, and vnwilling to deferre the happie content which the Pagan might receiue, did presently espouse them on the top of that hill, with moze ioy then if they were in their rich royall pallace. Witnesses the y did not want, for at the contract there were present, the beauteous Nymphes Oreades and Hamadryades, with many haire Siluan Gods.

The Greeke by telling them who hee was, did very much please the new betrothed couple. There they pass away the remnant of the night in pleasant chat, for the Pagan with gladnesse felt not his wounds, and the Greeke not willing to disturbe their content, dissembled his own. But when Apollos light expelled Cynthias darknesse from the heauen, all three toke their next way to the Cittie, where hearing what had befallen, they had armed aboue twentie thousand men, the which seuerall waies diuided in many troupes went to seeke their king. Many of them they met, that greatly reioyced seeing him well, who gaue order for the recalling of the rest backe againe, which was so well followed, that befoze none they all returned. In honour of the Nuptials, throughout the Cittie and all the Kingdome, many triumphs and Iousts were ordained: therein the Greeke shewed the incomparable valor of his person. Hee continued there in the cure of his wounds aboue a month, so tendred and honored, as in Greece he could be no moze. So thankfull did the Ladie shew her selfe by her tender care and carefull attendance, that the Greeke accounted all his paines



## of the Mirroure of Knighthood.

paines well bestowed for her. At length thinking it time, he tolde the Prince how necessarie his departure was.

It extreamely grieved them, for they loued him as a brother: They intreated him to stay one eight dayes more, till the ending of an armour which the Lady had caused to be made, hee was constrained to stay because he would not go without them.

It well appeared by their riches, the good will they beare to him: they likewise gaue him a lustie strong Courser, wherewith, and with the armes the Prince was well pleased. He tooke his leaue of braue Abstrusio, and not without many teares from Syrindas faire eyes. They remained so affected vnto him, that when the Greeke warres were knowne, this was one brought great ayde thither, doing the Greekes such good seruice, that thereby they sufficiently paie the Prince, who with some grieue for their absence in a well rigged ship, Nauigated towards Nyquea, thinking he should sooner there then in any other place, heare of his Lady.

On the fift Nauigation, Fortune already beeing weary of her stay, would shew him one of her fiercest changes, for obtaining Nephtunes fauour, she conspired with Eolus to pley turuey to ouerturne the seas, raising such tempestuous stormes, that the Prince saw himselfe a thousand times in the hands of death: sometimes mounted aloft vpon the deuouring rigges of a waue, as high as a heauens weeping face, and then tumbling downe, as lowe as the lowest Center of the deepe, thinking himselfe and shippe ouerwhelmed in those mercilesse waters, accompanying the watery dwellers in their Cauerns. Then would he pittie his weake ouermatched vessell, to see it strue against two such mightie Elementall foes, for having lost by furie of the raging windes, all her sayles, her mastes, and tackels aboue, was belowe so cruelly assaulted with the seas, remorselesse surges, that beating at her belly and sides, had hewed their passage through her ribbes, entring her breaches so without all pitie, that neither by pumping, nor any other means, her leakes were vnable to be stetched, that the poore Marriners tyred with labour, amazed at the tempests, fiercenesse and confounded with death: submitted to the pittilesse mercie of windes and waters, whose pittious woful clamors piercing the roaring noyse of their opposed enemies, ascended the high heauens. The casting overbord, of goods, anchors and cables, nothing doth auaille, and what in haste they cannot hurle over-



### The third Booke of the third Part

wordes, the furious winde doth blowe away, and that it leaues, an enuious surge doth wash into the sea.

Thus hopelesse of all remedie tossed vp and downe, for the vnbideled rage of violent fighting windes, being brichained from the earthes obscure concauities, blew frō euery corner nothing but consuming wrath, death and destructiō, tying their force vpon the smal weak vessell, which they had tozme in many places. Foure dayes fought they thus against the vnceasing dismal tempests, in the end whereof, the poore death-fainting saylers seeming to forsee an vnloked for calme, a sudden furious Southerne blast opened the tozme Barke, leauing the distressed louer grappling at a plank vpon the whistling Willowes, and yet with his sword in his mouth: for without it (pittifull Ladies) he would not die. With such violence blew the windes, that violently on a flintie Rocke they hurled him, to whose top, with the strength of his armes he got. From whence he looked to see what would become of the ship and mariners, where he saw the lamentable spectacle, the poore Maister riding on the waters, vpon a Chest, whereon he set all his hope, till a deuouring waue came and bereft him of both it and life. The groanes hee heard, of the rest that perished, seeing the fardels, packes, trusses, caper on the dauncing bilowes, and soming waues. No courage preuailed with them, nor their continuall liuing on the sea: so euery one (as it is wont) it buried in her watery bowels. So extreame sorrowfull remained the Prince of great Britaine at the lamentable spectacle, that with teares in his eyes he burst forth into this passion. Oh supream high heauens, how no man in this miserable world may iustly call himselfe, sure or happie? There is no state, no dignitie, nor office how high soeuer it be aduanced, but is by fortune, subiect to the greatest and most dangerous falles? Him call I happie that least doth set his confidence in fortune, or hath least receiued of her blinde gifts, terming her benefites, the threating of greater miserie. What good is there on earth but is mingled with a thousand vnsauorie displeasing euilles, and of discontentes, misfortunes, and lamentable euentēs, such and so many, that onely leaue him with his bare name, ouerpzessing the soule with tormentes, and greewing the perplexed minde with most greecious and woofull paines?

After that, by little and little the furie of the sea was allwaged, he hasted to a coppes that not farre from thence he espied, there to die  
his



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

his clothes, and himselfe. There Trebatios haughtie Sephele described himselfe, leauing but his onely shirt vpon him, remembering with some tenderneſſe the troubles he had ouerpast: iudging by the greatnes of them, they would at length, wearte of themselves, bring him to a delectable ſweete ende, that then with the preſent happineſſe he might ioyfully recount his former infelicities.

This conſideration ſomewhat animated him, ſuffering that diſtreſſe moze patiently. Example ſhould they take by him, that in leſſe dangers forget to make vſe of ſufferance, eſteeming that death, which peraduenture the celeftiall powres doth but ordaine for tryall of theyr workes.

The Greeke againe apparelled himſelfe, his beſtiments beeing drie, and laid him downe to reſt, neuer moze deſtitute thereof then at that inſtant: it was little, for ſtraight hee awakened to ſeek ſome path which might leade him to ſome Village: hee found it, but with ſome trouble: for without it, nothing deſired is lightly obtained. And going along the ſame, there happened to him, what the inſuing Chapter doth mention.

### CHAP. XIII.

What befell vnto the mightie Roſabell, with certaine other Ladies, of whome hee learned the countrey wherein hee then was.



Dare almoſt aſſure my ſelfe (faire Ladies) your beuities haue with ſome feeling (except your harts be harder then the flint, or moze obdurate then the Diamond) attended y<sup>e</sup> Greeke princes ſhipwreck: In faith his worthes deſerue it: for hee that with an (ayme) ſubmits himſelfe to græfe, maketh himſelfe vnworthie of comiſeration, being in neceſſities: and yet, neuer any merited fauour, that denied it to the needie. Something deſtitute of it was Olyuias haughtie ſonne, but from the middeſt of his heart drew he ſtrength to reſiſt his woes: who although incompaſſed on all ſides with ſo many extreames, did neuer forget her, whoſe fauours were wont to cheriſh him, and now in abſence putting him to his tryall.

This



### The third Booke of the third Part

This vertue hath true loue (remoueable by nothing from the soule, where it buildeth once his rest,) opposing it selfe against all inconueniences, though ordered by his Lady, whereof being assured, takes them as comforts to his distresse. Many examples there are of this, yet of them I wil recount but one, witnesse my mothers sonne, whom neither the changes of time, nor time altering course of life: nor yet the mutabilitie of state in life, can make him denie his Captiuitie, nor omit the dulled accentues of an vnaccented passion, with remembrance of his grones for his vn pittying warres. And though she know it, and the sinceritie of his affection, yet turnes she away the pittie of her fauour, one telling him his paines are too fewe. Pittie so vnfortunate a Louer (pittifull Ladies) and yet that shall first heare of his grieve, greater then that which neuer any had, nor worse respected: yet this comfort hath hee, that a lady (exceeded all worth of comparison) moued with his laments, said (vnknowne by whom) vngratefull truth may shee be called, that thus intreateth this distressed Louer: Venus and Cupid reward thee (beautious Lady) and I am hee wil when thou shalt desire Loues helpe, against Fortunes tyrannie: for the Greeke Lord suffering his labours with constant sufferance, in the ende obtained his Lyriana, whose onely sight made him deeme all his former discontents, most sweete contents.

With this hope trauelled hee on foote, onely with his sword, hauing taken the straightest and most troden path. Hee had not gone farre, but vexed with thirst (although newe dyed of waters) he turned vp a long by a cleare streame, till he came to the head of the spring, about which, was builded an Allablaster fountaine, whose worke, with the clearenesse of the waters, invited the Prince to drinke. Which done, he did eate of such frute as the frutefull trees did yeeld, that round incompassed the fountaine. Tired with his former toyles, he laid him downe and slept a good while, resting his rest wanting amorous ioynts.

Farre was he not from the great cittie of Golchueg, chiefe in the Kingdome of Sylephia, lying betwene Polonia and Bohemia, and therefore at the instant, he dreamed the sweetest vision in all his life: for thinking himselfe embraced his Lady, the Princesse Eufronia, whose beautie was inferiour to none, equalling the fayrest that met in Constantinople,



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Constantinople at the Tryumphes . She was very young, having not yet attained to 14. yeares, which made her as children use, walke to sport her selfe about those woods that bordered on her garden : and having lost her selfe with one Lady, from the rest of her attendants, so amazed was not Venus, when she first saw the boy Adonis along the banks of Nylus, as with admiration the bewtious Eufronisa was astonished with the Greeke Princes sight that lay upon the grasse, seeming more faire then when young Apollo in habit of a shepheard tended Alestes Goates. He was big of body, his other parts and liniaments are already set downe , although now he entered into 20, they were better perfected . With more desire did the Lady gaze on him , then in the woods of Troy , the three faire Goddesses expected Paris sentence.

So much she yielded to the sight, that shee began to feelee a newe alteration neuer felt before in her heart : for being but a childe, she yet knew not the meaning of Lones pretie fooleries. With some wonder she turned to her damzell, with these words. Hast thou ever seene more perfect bewtie then this gallant youth doth shew : I beleue that Nature at his byrth, angrie with her selfe, did thus create him to despight her selfe: I cannot thinke but he is childe to some of our immortal Gods, that haue now sent him on the earth to alienate all straungers wits. Which if it be so, we Ladies must strengthen our selues with courage, for I feare, the wisest will need it to scape free of his sight, so absolute is he in all things . This aduice came too late to the tender Lady , for Loue had already made her his Goddess till the death : neither had she power to vntie the knot wherewith blinde Cupid had bound her hart, tying it so hard, as he left it insoluble.

I pittie thee gallant Eufronisa, that in the nonage of thy yeares, thou shuldest begin so lowe an office, as to be subiect to an vnkown lord, I wold willingly giue thee some consolation, but so much I do want it, as rather for both I should procure it. No vaine, no colour, no fashion was in the Byptanickes face, but she coted it within her very soule, giuing it the shadow , and her heart the substance, which being so tender and vnacquainted with change, toke such impression, that neuer Lady yielded more to loue then Eufronisa . Now she desires to speake to him, then feares she. Already becomes she suspicious, that neuer learned to loue.



### The third Booke of the third Part

Before she knew who he was, she became so skilfull in the Art, that she feared whether he loued, whether he could loue or acknowledge anies soueraigntie. Now she that stains the blushing of the mornings Sunne, becomes enuious of her owne thoughts, and doth distrust her owne worths, seeking new deuises and inuented meanes to be beloued, deserving for her owne belowie, lowes immortal worship. Oh Cupids blind snares, happinesse in misery, a plague in pleasure, and grief without remedy, found vnscought for, and yet a torment that contains a most sweete life. By her amazednesse, perceiued the damzel her Ladies ma-  
ladie, wherefore she merily said: Let vs awake this knight, and try whether his belowie haue more force waking or sleeping. Do what you wil (replied she) although it be no modestie considering who we be. Rather waighing that, I thinke it best to do it (said the wittie Selia) to see what he is that hath such power ouer Ladies: for if his merits equals all other parts requisite in a good knight, he may call himselfe one of the happiest in the world. So long continued the Ladies in their amorous chat, that the Prince awaked with these words. Oh fortune, how dost thou flatter my hopes, for if thou giuest me any good, tis only dreaming, that when I wake to see it, I finde it but an illusion. He said no more, for the Ladies sight staied him, both from the publishing his woes, as of the cause of them. He rose, admiring the Ladies belowie: who first spake thus. You should seeme to haue fewe enemies (sir knight) seeing so carelessly you lye and sleepe in passages so open, that any by you offended, may at his pleasure right himselfe. He answered: So crosse and austere hath my fortune allwaies bene most betweneous Ladie, that it did neuer let me knowe the state wherein I might say I had a friend, for euen my owne thoughts do most within my brest, make warre against my rest: wherefore hauing none to trust vnto, forceth me to set my selfe in the hands of euery one, that one in this generalitie, would shewe the office of a friend, by taking away my despised life, then as such a one I should account him, for by the deed giuing me one death, he riddes me of a thousand that I suffer in continuall languishment: and it, might I wel call life: for he liues well, that feesles no more pain. Great is your grieve (answered the Ladie) and of force to drawe com-  
miseration from the hardest heart, and greater it is, seeing that none pities you, were it but with a counterfeit remedie, noting the waight of your complaints,



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

**I**n faith (faire Ladie) said the Prince, so mightie are my oppressions, that although I know them, and the paine I endure by them, yet I must suffer them, for if I live, it is by living in paine, so that should I, but never so little ease this paine, it would be scene in the want of my health.

**I**f it doth so please you (replied the Ladie) briuilly you complaine, and I thinke you greatly wrong your Ladie, terming her cruel. My complaints (most soueraigne Ladie) are not so much ment against my lifes directnesse, as against my unhappie starres, that make me infortunate in fauours, but not in my imployment, for neuer was any better, but in such a place where my griefs be scorned. Some reason you haue (said the Lady) hauing this occasion to bewaile: for where sorrow is not regarded, there is a double griefe, and gladly would I know who you are, and where borne, for you seeme a stranger in these parts. I cannot but obey your soueraigne commaund (most excellent Lady) answered the Greeke: I was borne in the farthest Confines of great *Tartaria*, and am called Corolano, cast by fowle weather and tempest of the sea, on this Countrey, passing so many troubles, that had I not receiued such vnerpected comfort with your faire sight, no doubt, but that my soule seeing the bodie drenched in misery, and as unworthie to containe it, had it forsaken me, but to enjoy within it the view of your happy sight, gaue life to her liuelesse habitation: And that I may commit no error (for it is impossible but I haue incurred some) suffer my prayers by your admittance to make me deseruer to know the name of the land so happie in the possession of such admirable beauty. Quickly doe you require a payment for the discovery of your name (Sir knight) replied Selia, (for the Princesse could not, busied in her new and painfull businesse) but because you shall not altogether iudge your selfe infortunate in your presences, know this land is called *Sylepsia*, whereof this Lady is Princesse, and going on hunting, we lost our company and our selues: yet wee haue not hunted ill, hauing founde the amorousst knight in the world: and so according to your shewes, none like you haue better assurance of the Louers Tent, whose aduenture was newly brought into this Cittie, and the proofe thereof shall within these foure daies be begunne, and little shall you not please vs to hazard your person in the tryall.



### The third Booke of the third Part

I am so ill provided of Armoz and other necessities, (saie damzell answered the tender Prince) that though I were unwilling to do it, yet to content your belovties, with them I would try it, assured that for loving and being unfortunate, to me the glozy is onely due.

This want shall not hinder you (saie Eufronisa) for I will furnish you with the best armoz that ever you saw, earst belonging to the first king that raigned in this countrey, named Tersio, equall in soueraintie of Fortitude and Wisedome, strengthened by Art and skill wherewith he forged them, and neuer were seene by any. These ile send you by this damzell, first swearing you shall not absent your selfe from this Kingdome without my leave, and in our Pallace shall you be cherished.

The amorous Lady spake so plainly, as the Prince could perceiue Loues new wound. There is none so destitute of iudgement, but wold haue weighed what he obtained to be beloued of so faire a Dame: for if the Prince had ever seene pure belotie, she was the perfect stampe thereof: in whose creation, Nature the olde Mars of liuing forme, had shewed the utmost of her skill, modeling her liniaments, more absolute then thought could wish. Among so fewe yeares as they both had, was neuer seene completer excellencies: so he answered. Who dares most soueraigne Lady, shew himselfe so vngratefull to the fauours imparted by your care beloty, as to commit a fault so hainous to depart from you without your license? I am so long since captiue to anothers wil, as now to acknowledge it anew is no pain, but rather cheefest happines, knowing to whom I owe seruice. Why then (saie she) we may be gon, assured you will do no otherwise, and this night will I send you horse and Armoz, whose sight will content you: In the meane time hyde your selfe amongst these Pynes: for having lost our selues, it cannot bee but our Guard will seeke vs out.

The Greeke now had no more will but to fulfill the Ladies: and so taking his leaue of the young childe, already olde in loue, he thrust himselfe into the thickest thereof. Without a thousand embracements she had not sent him, feared she not to be too much noted of watonnesse, yet with her eyes she exprest her hearts desire. They are (soveraign Dames) the tonguelesse messengers that best make knowne the paine and pleasure of the soules. Better signes of like or dislike, is there not, then the motion of those speechlesse speakers.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

As one rapt in a dustie blacke cload, so seemed Eufronisa in absence of her sonne. Ay me (my Selia) said the amorous Ladie, what in auspicious lucke crosses my tendernesse to affect the knight that hath already another granted the possession, of his soule: Who can loue him, knowing hee affects another, wherewith the heauens haue adozned mee, and yet not made me proude? for if he loues another, how shall I loue him, being sure that for my sight hee will not violate the promise of his sacrificed faith, and yet who will not dote on him: What inconueniences can restraine me from his loue: what infamie, what dishonour, or what staine of maidens fame may befall me, but my soule will regardlesse trample on, so with equall loue her paines might be rewarded: Why, I doo not feare the foolish rude reports of common multitudes, when they shall ioyne their mouthes to saines shrill trumpe, far and neare to sound my shame, when this my folly shall bee noysed abroad I will loue and dote on him, and yet I do beleue, that doing so, I do not sufficiently answer the merits of his valour, nor noble carriage of his minde.

And though it be a torment intollerable, to knowe another is inclined in his best, I cannot refuse the diuine appoyntment, nor what heerein my haplesse fates ordaine: for otherwise, none more happie then I in loue: and I cannot beleue he is as hee hath said to bee, for these that haue the power to bee beloued of euerie one, doo neuer disclose their true names, countrie, and estates, wherefore wee must by all meanes procure to learne his certaine name, for beeing intreated thereto, I do not doubt but he will.

What he is easie to be knowne (answered the damozell) hauing him in our lodging, for if he be in loue, (as he seemed to be) being alone, hee will publish it, and perchance more then we now wish, for intire loue cannot be hushd in secret, and euery one too much bragges of this blind opinion, as to account the greatest comfort to participate the inward thoughts, to stones, to wals, to groues, to fields, and windes. Ay me (my Selia) by experience thou dost shew to haue ben in loue (said Eufronisa) who can discourse of seas, of rockes, of shallowes, and of tempests, but such as haue navigated, scapt and past them: What is hee that feares his enemy, that hath not bene wounded at his hands: If this bee so, and thou so skilfull, I will repose the trust of this my businesse, on thy discretion and experience.



### The third Booke of the third Part

Had it bene for nothing but to helpe you in this tempest, (soveraigne Ladie) answered Selia, I account the time well bestowed, I spent in Loues toys, letting my soule confesse with content, anothers superiouritie. I am well acquainted with Loues deuises and his allurements: I know where he is resisted, there enuiously hee strives to subiugate new forces, causing afterwards greater paines for refusing his deitie, and denying his prerogative ouer all the world, as hee that can onely giue life or death with ioy. Why then (my deare Selia) said the Princesse, it is likely he wil not so cruelly tyrannize ouer me, that willingly admitted the heauie yoke of his slaerie, as he vseth against them that leuied armes and warre against his power. Selia answered. To demand no condition of this God, is best for gouerning absolutely by himselfe, doth not (being blinde) consider the greuous paines the soule indures, and many times with a little, rests hee moze content, (in the end hee is but a childe) then if a thousand hearts were sacrificed to appease his wrath. They could proceed no further in their sweet chat, for many knights came to them that carefully did seeke them, fearing some disgrace had befallen them. They were glad when they met them, so altogether returned to the Cittie, for the Princesse would no longer stay, hauing already foode to nourish her conceits. The night beeing come, they bound the armour in a bundle, and the Ladie sent to a kinsman of hers, whom shee trusted to make readie the best horse within the Cittie. He did it, desiring to do her seruice, which when she knew, making him sweare to keepe her counsell, she bad him go with Selia, for she had promised a knight to furnish him, to proue the Louers tent. So leauing her, they arriued in good time at the fountaine, where they found the Greeke ouerwhelmed in imaginations, expecting the Ladies commaund. After courtesies past on either side, Selia said. The Ladie (sir knight) that met you here this day, sendes you this armour and horse, for seeing you promised her to proue the aduenture of the Louers tent in her name, shee thought good to furnish you with necessities therfore. Whereto the Greeke replied. Faire damzell, you may tell that Ladie, that with such a fauour, a harder enterprize is assured. They would not talke of other matters, because of the olde mans presence, moze then to giue him direction for his way, and thereupon departed, leauing the Prince expecting the coming of the next morne, wherein faire Ladies there befell him what you shall heare.



# of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

## CHAP. XIII.

What happened to the Prince *Rosabell*, going to the Citie to prooue the aduenture of the Lovers Pavilion.



**V**nable to conceiue the cause why that beauteous Princesse should shewe him such kindnesse, laye Rosiclers braue sonne vpon the grasse, passing away the night in that thicket, looking for the desired mozne, meane while, taking some rest. Two houres before it did appeare, he awaked with the remembrance of his lost Ladie, recording with what rigoꝝ fortune had crost his ioyes, iudging his shipwacke was not yet an end vnto his troubles, thinking that yet the blinde Goddesse was not content with his tried patience. He hartly wished to know new meanes to indure such excessive torments as he daily suffered. This imagination so opprest him, that to ease with passage his burthening passions, he beganne to plaine him to the trees, that with their stirring noyse, moued by the gentle blasts of Zephyrus, seemed to pittie his laments breathed against her, whose mutabilities are the plagues and scourges of mortall men. They were not vttered with such silence, but might bee heard by Astorildo Prince of Callidonia, brother to the beauteous Rosamond, that departing from his sister in Greece, (glad in his soule to see her so well bestowed) travelled to seeke aduentures thzough the world, performing many braue deeds vnder the name of the knight of the Griffon, all which are at large set downe in the Chronicles Lupercio writ of all the Pagans acts. Galtenor doth not here mention them, because they appertained not vnto the storie he composed. So now was the free Pagan ouerhearing the Greeces complaints: he was not moued at the, for he had not yet yielded his libertie to loue. A while he stayed, thinking the complaint would further proceed. It fell out as hee would haue it, for hee vttered many pittifull exclaimes, asoze Auroras shining in the heauens, yet could he not by them iudge who he was, moze then the constancie he publisht of his Loue: who was so carefull to go vnto the Citie, that in the instant he put on the rich armour Eufronisa had sent him.

Such



### The third Booke of the third Part

Such were they as appertained to a nouell knight, all white, but garnisht with many flowers of precious Rubies. They greatly pleased him, being of the best in the world, as also because with such of like colours, he departed from Nyquea, and combatted with his father. His shield was like his armour, in middle thereof, bearing the picture of Faith, held by a white hand, which for all that two Serpents with their stinges did pricke, would not loosen it. The word this.

Loues greefes the longer,  
Holds *Faith* the stronger.  
Though orepressed: still my selfe.

Clad in these faire armes, and mounted on a lustie Courser, did Trebacios haughtie stephew pace on towards the famous cittie, glad to see it with so many Danubious streames, which made it one of the fertilest soyles in the world.

The same way did he spy the valiant Astorildo, in faire greene armour full of Pomegranates, and on his shield a fearfull Griffin. Wonders had Rosabell heard of him, reioycing to see him of such bzaue disposition: so did he admire the Greeke, supposing he was him, that in the Forrest he had heard complaine, hee gazed on him a while, iudging his behaviour to excel his that in Grecia had overthron him. Having each met with the other, they extended such courtesie, as they iudged eithers merits to deserue. The Callidonian spake first in that countrie language, saying.

I would gladly knowe (sir knight) who you are, for it seemeth to mee, I haue seene you farre from hence. In the same tongue replied the Greeke, being well skild in most. I am (sir knight) of such remote countrie, that though I should tell my name, you could not knowe me: notwithstanding through those places I haue trauelled, and where I am best knowne, I am called the Knight of the Flowers, being by stormes and fortune of the seas, cast on this land, where I vnderstood, there is in the Kings Court, a certaine aduenture arriued very lately, which ere I did depart, I was willing to know and proue it, hazarding but little thereby, bring on Ladies behalves, whose seruice brings with it a reward for any paine how great soeuer, although it should be thought none done in a Ladies name.

There



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

There is reason (replied the Callidonian) to procure their content with perill of our liues, but this must be with assurance of reward. **W**here to the Greeke answered. Then deserues he not to bee beloued, that doth it for reward. **P**euier (sir knight) was that loue famous, where to a recompence was proposed, which must by deserued loue be obtained: for as loue is the motion of a noble act, for which all good is desired to the thing loued, so doth not hee merit that honoured, title that seeks it for any other thing, vnlesse it bee to let the world admire the rarenesse of his qualities, not inclining to the other, which rather is a price prefixed for loue, dishonouring the reputation of the Louer, and disableth his worthes, through the hopes of that guerdon which otherwise might make him most happie. And well it seemes you knowe not what it is to bee anothers, alleadging such an ironious opinion, condemned of all that knowe what happinesse it is, happily to loue, which makes me smile to thinke how safe the Tent is from you, for being to be given to louers, your libertie excludes you from that priuiledge, which by being one, you haue obtained. **I** would not haue you so rashly iudge, by what you knowe not (replied the Dagan) for you may be deceined. **H**ow should I be (said the Greeke) hearing you so plainly vrgge your libertie? **P**ay then (returned the Callidonian) that you may know the vnadvisednesse of your iudgement, **I** say, none shall proue it, vnlesse he first proue mee vpon the speeches wee haue vrged, for who the diuell hath euer loued, without hope of something. **W**hat hope (answered Rosabell somewhat moued) the Louer must not haue, but leaue it in the Ladies dispose, for it is shee must consider the merits of that faith, wherewith shee sees shee is adored, and according to those deserts and her bountie, she yeldes the due reward. And **I** am sorrie wee should with new braules enter into the Pallace, and **I** beeing first aduertised of the aduenture, the first triall ought to bee mine. And so about both matters (having now opportunitie) let our battell be, with this condition, (least we want time for the aduentures promised) that hee which forgoeth first his saddle, shall not see the aduenture, vnlesse he be commaunded by the conqueror. **N**othing doth better please me (said Astorildo) that you may know your error by your loue.

**S**o these two famous warriors turned their horses, bravelly confronting each other. **H**oze hoze makes not the furious waues, beating



### The third Booke of the third Part

ting on the stonie rockes, then they by their incounters.

The Dagan was one of the greatest that the Greeke had receiued, for it cast him backwards on his horse, with losse of both stirrups: but the Dagan chanced worse, for Mars on horsebacke equalled not the Prince, that met him so strongly, that fetching him cleane from his saddle, he fel on his feete. Recouer he would his seate befoze the Greeke returned, hauing the bridle in his hand, but the horse starting at his offer, mounted aloft and put him from it, that the Greeke when hee turned, saue him on the ground: where hee required the combat with the sword. We should so stay ouerlong (said the Greeke) for fear thereof made me condition thus: but we shall haue time ere you depart this land to do it, the which I promise to perfoyme, bee it but to disswade you from your heresie. And that you may beginne to credit me, I am content you first proue the aduenture, so shall you see what aduantage you should haue, not hauing this opinion which your libertie makes you maintaine. Otherwise could not the Dagan do, for noted he would not be of discourtesie: so he promised to accomplish it, and mounting againe like two great friendes, they tooke their way to the Cittie, arriuing there at the first houre after noone, when all the principall thereof repaired to the Pallace to see the aduentures proue, together with many valiant straungers that about it were thither come. As these two warriours passed through the streetes, al the peoples eies they drew after them, admiring to see them so well armed, & of so braue disposition. Gallanter knights were not in that Cittie scene of many yeares befoze. As too and fro the streetes were crossed by passengers that went to the Court, and they doing the like, the sunnes splendent rayes reuerberated on their glittering armour, as no sence could moze desire. The amorous Eufronisa lost not this sight, for standing on a turret, she saue the maiesticke pacing of her gallant, and said vnto her selfe, shee had giuen him but litle to make him Lord only of her hart. There is no Ladie (saide Loues newe Scholler) that hath moze reason to loue then I, since (in my opinion) the Gods haue not reserued vnto themselves, moze grace, moze brauerie, noz moze worth, then they haue bestowed on this knight. Somewhat did this deefied couple prick their horses, and passing vnder the Ladies being, the Greeke made his, bend his knees to the ground, and his head lower then his brest. The Ladie seeing it, raised her selfe to do him courtesie, which as a fauor she bestowed, not respecting how she might be noted for it. Near her stood her wittie Selia, that burst into these words.

I cannot



## of the Mirroure of Knighthood.

I cannot blame you, (Souveraigne Princesse) for loving him that was bozne to be beloued, and if for him you suffer, he hath with him a remedie for your greatest maladie, and therefore doo not complaine, for if you do, He sweare you do dissemble. She answered. If there were any with him, that would so well plead my deserts to him, as hee hath here to read his merits to my beleefe, it might bee I should bee able to dissemble my paine when it takes me: & yet can I not denie what thou alledgest, for his gallant behavioꝝ is a comfort in midst of my greatest woes. The two famous knights alighted, for the hall (being one of the fairest in the world) was full of knights, that expected the pꝛoofe of the Louers Pavillion. In the outward yarde they left their horses, and as friends togither entred into the hall, having round about an infinite of rich seates, excepting a corner, purposely hung and reserued for y<sup>e</sup> Ladies that then entred, whose beautie and bꝛaueurie delighted euerie heart. The most beauteous Eufronisa would not differ in her colour of garments from the Brittaines armoꝝ, apparrelling her selfe al in white, imbꝛodered with red roses, that neuer to the Ladies sight it admitted no compare. The Greeke did note it well, & smiled at it. This occasion expected Cupid to yoake the best of warlike Astorildo, that in scoꝛne of him had long time led his life: and so with the sight of the Ladies rare beautie, he was beset with new desires, feeling his heart subdued. A wound was this he received, that onely death cured, for that solely had power to remedie it: for the Ladie busied her eies gazing on the Greeke, he thinking on Lyriana, in whom his hopes, life, & felicitie consisteth. So that only Loue must please this third intruder: for Astorildo already loues, his life depends on his alienation: now he græues for apꝛoynting combat with the Greeke, seeing it toucheth what hee adores, and with a word he hath even now changed his opinion, by beeing in loue, and without hope euer to obtain any recompence for his distresse. And yet the Ladie scoꝛning the firmnesse wherewith he loues her, placeth it in affecting him that laughes at her, because he dotes vpon Lyriana. So the Ladies sate them down, being aboue a hundꝛeth in number, daughters to the chiefe Nobles of the Realme. When all were silent, an ancient graue man, for so he was that brought the Tent, did set it in middle of the hall. A fairer pꝛeece was neuer seene: it was all of blew Sattin, imbꝛodered with Artechokes of golde, set with so many stones, that their splendoꝝ depꝛiued the sight of it.



## The third Booke of the third Part

At the doore thereof appeared two knights richly armed, that seemed to challenge the sight of euery one present: within was scene a faire thzone, wheron sate a Lady of exceeding beautie, holding in her hands a crowne of inestimable value. Thus euery one expecting to knowe of the ancient knight the sum of the aduenture, the Ladies and knights yeelding him gratefull audience, he beganne to recite the cause of his comming, whose relation deserues a new Chapter, inferring mee to intreat of you, faire wenders of natures beauties like attention, for now haue I most neede thereof, expressing a matter of it selfe so woorthie to be knowne.

### CHAP. XV.

How the knight ending his relation of his aduenture, his knights began to prooue it, and what them befell.



At high and mightie King of Sylepsia (began the ancient knight) in the Southerne parts and regions of the world, there sometimes dwelled a man in the hidden and secret misteries of Art and nigromantike spels the skilfullest of his time, whose knowledge and great wisdom could not keepe him from the snares of deceitfull loue, who intrapt him with the beautie of Belisa, daughter to the king of Arabia the Felix, one of the fairest Ladies on the earth, who gouerned with higher thoughts, admitted not the wise Nycostratos affection. He atchiued many woorthie deeds in her seruice, yet all would not preuaile to moue the Ladies loue, nor yet to shew him one counterfeited fauor, which put him in such desperation, as daily he neglected the estimation of his credit, & more & more lost his health. On this Ladie were also inamored two Princes, alike in valour and deserts, though one was more happie hauing the Ladies fauor: who fedde him with those hopes that they are wont to giue their louers, at which was worse then death to the wise man, as also to the other knight rejected.

So Nycostrato knowing it, as also the approach of his liues fatall houre, & finding that Belisa was cause thereof, purposed ere he left the world, to be reuenged, & so formed he this wondrous Tent, where hee enchanted the Ladie, bereauing her of iudgement, for the little respect she had made of his great loue.

Also



## of the Mirroure of Knighthood.

Also he enchanted the two louers to defend the entrance, vntill there were a knight so amorous and valiant, but as unhappie as eyther, that by vanquishing might restore them their lost libertie. And Belisa, by the Lady that without exception, best deserved the tytle of constant Louer, yet worse rewarded: for onely this & to be sayest, must free enchanted Belisa. In the estate they be, they suffer many torments: for so pleased it Nycostrato, the more to satisfie his reuenge. That knight that is fauoured by Fortune, shall end the Combat, must after leade the Lady that will proue the aduenture. In many courts of mightie kings haue we bene, hoping to finde some knight to set a periode to our trauell: but the Princes being valiant, and the Lady very faire, none hath preuailed, no not so much as in the entrance. Almost despairing euer to finde remedie for these Princes, I heard of the famous knight and belovious Ladyes of your Court. With some better hope I turned hither, which I trust will not be frustrated, considering the worthies here assembled of eyther kinde. So I humbly beseech your Maiestie, commaund your knights vnto the proue, for no small honour shall hee win that ends it.

There were so many desirous of it, as they expected but the kings commaund, among them were two of the kings Cozens, both louers and reputed valiant. Many prouing the entrance, and losing it, made shew of their valour, attributing their losse not to it, but to their happinesse in loue, and so returned with great comfort, thinking they had obtained much thereby. The Prince of Laronia, a young knight, but a notable loue, prepared himselfe: who drawing forth his sword, made against the two competitors, beginning a well fought combat: but after a while he rettyed backe, vnable to endure his enemies strong blowes.

No longer stayed the kings two Cozens, but one after another made knowne their valour vnto the beholders, yet in the end were forced to withdraw. More couragious warriors had not the king scene then those of the Tent, who in lesse then two houres had overcome above fiftie knights, besides the strangers the chiefe of the land. Onely now were left, the mightie Greeke, and Astorido: who taking his leaue of the Greeke (with whom he would not haue no longer quarrels) drew forth his sword and marched towards the Tent. The Prince was most skilfull in fence, and so marked the manner how they kept the



### The third Booke of the third Part

swore, where carefully fixing his eyes, flourishing aloft, let flie 2. blowes one after an other. They of the Tent, stept out toward them, which was to their euill, for he in despite of them won the entrance, whereat so many warlike instruments were heard, as if some generall fielde were to be fought. All the Hall did verily iudge he would win it: for being within, his deeds were incredible, so belabouring the Louers, as were he a little vnfortune, Galtenor, doubtlesse he had caused Rosabell a labour. For one of the Princes (being the beloued) going to wound him below the shield, Astorildo auoiding it, ran at him with so strong a thrust, that hee tumbled him backwards vpon the steps that ascended to the Lady. Being rid of him, he might execute a blowe vpon the others helme, it was with such force, as hee was forced to set his knees vpon the ground, run to ouerthrow him he would, which was the losse of his battell, for the other abashed at his hap, stept thither, and with both his hands laid on Astorildos helme, which made him stagger, like to fall. An other seconded the Competitor, with no lesse might then that which made him set both hands and knees on the earth. They cast their armes about him, and though he a while delayed his vanquishment, in the end he was thrust out, winning more honoꝝ then any had before him.

Now was none left but Lyrianas Princely Louer, who rising from his seate with excellent Maiestie, drew forth that worthie sworde that once belonged to the mightiest and greatest enemye the Greekes had. There was none, but with admiration gazed on the Brytaine, for his gallant carriage assured the victorie. More eyes then Argos had, wished the Lady, to cote all his perfections, for she loued him dearer then her life. With furious pacing went the Greeke towards the Pauillion, whence was heard, what neuer was before, for the signall as to a battell of seuerall armies was sounded, with many shoutes and clamors, that it drowned euery ones hearing. Which being past, with more warlike aspect the two Competitors alwaighted their aduersaries comming: with their swords aloft they expected him that with his accustomed courage went neare them: at once they discharged 2. mighty blowes, yet bigger they must be to hinder him the entrance, for with a leap, ere they could again raise their swords, he ran in between them, and meeting with y vnbeloued, with his shoulders thrust him fro him, fiercer then a bullet shot from a musket, with a thrust wold the fauorite wound



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

wound him, which the Greeke being (skilfuller then he) nimbly auoided, and discharged his furie on his helme. The enchantment is vnable to resist the sharpe edge of Hectors blade, so2 it cut all the top, wounding him a litle on the head. Befoze he could settle himselfe, hee turned vpon the other, giuing him a puissant blowe on the shield. All that his sword reached it cast to the ground, leauing his arme with such extreame paine as he could scarce stir it.

Exceedingly praised in the Hall was the valour of the knight of the Flowers. New hautes so2 Eufronisa that gaue care to them, with more affection then Venus, when she met Adonis going to hunt. Yet now hath she no more to giue him, hauing done it all afoze, saue constancie doth shee procure to maintaine, wishing him a happie victorie, which was to some effect, so2 the Competitors came onely to fight, and thereto do animate themselves: but he that was bozne in armour will not be daunted with feare, bestowing neuer a blowe on the Louers, but makes them with hands and knees kisse the earth. None doubts the victorie, generally giuing it to the Greeke, that like a Lyon fought betwene the Competitors. The vnbeloued thrust at him strongly with his sword, thinking to haue runne him thorow, so much he made him giue backe, he seconded an other, which was trebled with a cruell stroke vpon his head by the Favourer. Something they amazed him, and doubling their blowes againe, made him set one knee on the ground. Hold on him to wraastle would Belias Louer haue taken, but Rosabell refused it, giuing on his head so mightie a blowe, as sencelesse at his fete he cast him. Swifter doth not an Eagle take her flight, then hee turned vpon the vnbeloued, and twirt his armes he raised him aloft, and breathlesse threw him to the earth. A greater noise did not Iliums tower make when it fell, then was heard at the Louers fall. Quercast was the Pavillion a while with a thicke fogge, which being past, it appeared as befoze, sauing that the knights lay at the Ladies fete, that then seemed fayrer, hauing an other Crowne on her head, besides that she held in her hands. With the sound of heauenly musick there also appeared the aduecture of Hope, which Don Eleno discovered at Escalauonia: and at the Ladies right hand, an old man that was iudged to be Nycostrato, So soone as the knights were vanquished, the ancient knight said to Rosabell.

¶



### The third Booke of the third Part

Most valiant knight, you may highly thinke of your selfe, hauing to your immortall glory ended, what in so many yeares could neuer bee attained. Now remaines, that the Ladies you leade, by you do proue the aduenture of the Crownes, and I hope also here to see it terminated. Every one in the hall greeted the knight of the flowers, with much ioy: neither exprest nor thought may that be, which Eufronisa did receiue, seeing what her knight with such honour had obtained, calling her selfe a thousand times happie, for placing her affection on him. The proue of the Crownes was begun by the ladies, with some feare, which notwithstanding was lessened by the knights company. One of the Kings Pieces, a Lady of rare beutie, taking the knight by the hand, said.

I would be sozie Sir Knight, that through my company you should loose what every one knoweth your valour doth deserue. That is it I feare (faire Lady) that my vnfortunate hap may debarre me from the honour your beutie had assured. Which being not so great as Belisas, made her returne without the Crownes: but with more glozie then any other had got, hauing ascended to the highest step where the Lady sate. Every one proued, yet got little by it. I beleue (Sir Knight) said the olde man, you haue attained a troublesome office by vanquishing the two amorous knights. It is a pleasure (replied the Prince) being in seruice of Ladies. Now onely remained Eufronisa, fearing she should not obtaine the victorie: iudging the enchanted Princesse to be fayrer, yet every one was of contrary opinion, although the Arabian was very faire: but being so neare him, she had impressed in her soule, added beutie to her beutie, that when she came to the tents doore she seemed Angelicall. She was not able, nor could shee there otherwise fauour her gallant, then to wzing him by the hand, that if Lyriana had not bene posselt of his heart, it had bene no wonder if she there had made him her prisoner. With a most solemne consort of melodious harmonie, were the two different Louers receiued. Hauing entered the Paullion, many Nymphes strewed all their way with sweete odorous flowers, of whose pleasant sinell all the hall participated. With more ioy did she mount the staires (thē the Carthage Dydo entred the Cane, where she found her deare Aeneas) till she came vnto the top, where the princesse Belisa rising, welcommed her, and taking off her Crowne from her head, set it vpon Eufronisas, saying. This receiue most excellent



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

cellent Princeesse, as a token I acknowledge the soueraigntie of your bewtie ouer mine. And in assurance of the exceeding loue I must beare you, and the extreame paine you shall endure, take this at my hands, which if you put on, when most you shall dispaire of comfort, this shall giue it you, though short and after, paine till death. But what thereby shall ensue, shall for aye content you. And you most glorious knight, though Fortune hath hitherto most cruelly persecuted you, haue courage against her changes, for you shall not return to Greece without the thing your soule most loues.

The Lady had no sooner ended what shee would say, when on a sudden the Pavillion vanished, onely leauing the beloued Prince in all his iudgement with the Lady. A sentence was proclaimed, wherby was gathered, that the vnbeloued Lord in recompence of his faith, so ill repayed, went to accompany amorous Celio, in the Castle of Hope. Euery one reioyced therat: for his loue to Belisa merited some reward. Who was most courteously entertained by the King with her beloued Prince, exceeding ioyfull to be at libertie, in company of his Lady, that assured his happinesse with a kinde loke.

The Ladies intreated the Græke to vndose his helme: he refused it, till Eufronisa with a wincke did bid him. He obeyed, which more allured the Lady, his bewtie increased as much admiration as his valour, for being heated by the battel, it was the greater. Some there was that said, it equalled the Ladies, and having as yet no beard, and being like his mother, no maruell if it were so compared, making the Ladies enuious of his graces. Among them he sate him downe with the greatest content he euer receiued, excepting that his Lady gaue him, when she receiued him as her husband, although hee lost her at the instant. There discoursed he with them, some demanding who he was, others, whether he was in loue, and others where his Lady was. With such wit, and discretion he answered them all, as he greatly gained theyr good willes. With her eyes did Eufronisa speake to him, till the nights approach made him take his leaue of the king, whose importunities could not make him stay. Softly did the Lady remember him of his promise of Belisa and her Louer, he craued leaue, leauing them much bound vnto him, he demanded of the knight of the Griffon, whether he wold stay there or no, for he could do no other wise but depart. So far in loue was Astorildo, that he answered.



## The third Booke of the third Part

Sir knight, in my soule I would be glad of your company, grāting that I euer crost you in your words: but at this time I am forced for a while to abide in this countrey, untill I bee aduertised the contrary from mine: and if in any thing my person or what I haue may do you seruiſe, bee assured I will perſorme it with my life. The Greeke gratefully accepting his offer, departed out of the Pallace, and on his lustie Courſer went out of the citie, minding being more darker, to returne and keepe his promise. How he accomplished it, the next at large relateth.

**CHAP. XV**  
How the Prince Rosabell returned to the citie, and what befell him with the Princesse Eufronisa.



Where I haue hitherto implozed the fauour of your desired aid (moſt faire and only worthy to be moſt faire Ladies) to proſecute this ſtozie to record of your fames, the imaginary grant thereof, hauing brought me to this ſtay, doubts his ſufficiencie farther to proceed, unleſſe it be anew allowed, and ſealed with a pardon, which for your owne ſakes, gentleneſſe and pittie, I hope for my ſelfe I ſhall obtaine, being but the interpreter of my Authoꝝ offence, committed by the Greeke, againſt your ſearch: although it was done by him, conſtrained by her, to allwaige the burning fire of Eufroniſas loue, and to remoue the desperate violent paſſions of the ſame. Whole reading (oh thinke then how you haue pardoned me) craueſh ſuch extenuation, as patiently you will not denie: for his returne will offend your beſeties, violating plyted faith to Lyriana, by which iniurie, your worthes can not but receiue ſome detriment. And ſo comming to the place appointed him by Selia, he left his horſe among the trees, to ſeede alone maiſterleſſe: although he was not long without one, for being ſo good, hee did not little eſteeme him, that tooke him thence. But Rosabell went ſtraight vnto the ladies garden, and knocking at the doze, Selia opened it, ſaying.



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

Now are you worthy greater estimation knight of the Flowers, that you wold so willingly come and obserue your word, which I may attribute to your sufficient vertues.

Farre vnworthy of fauour were hee (faire Damoyell) that wold not know what happinesse by doing it is obtained. Why then come with me (said she) for Ile commit you to better hands then mine; and since you haue this day displeased me, prouing of the Crowne, do not maruel, if I should put you in such a prison, as Iupiter wold not leaue the Empire of the heauens to lide in it. Any thing proceeding from you (gentle Lady) Ile accept as a fauour (answered the Greeke) being assured, that since you know my will, you will not be against my consent, which I shall esteeme most great, to worke yours. And they arrived at the Ladies lodging, where they were forced to silence, least they should be heard, and the Prince toke off the armor from his legs. So went they euery where Eufronisa did expect him fairer then Diana, yet so abashed and fearefull, that though she saw him, yet could not speake. But from her weakenesse she drew strength to say, embracing him, now Loue began to helpe her. I wold not (valiant knight) haue you attribute this my boldnesse, to more then to requite what I am indebted to you, hauing this day to your high honour, most nobely honoured our court, where my selfe also had part (through your valour) of the glorious end of the aduenture.

In eternall records of liuing memorie to succeeding ages shall this remaine, together with this my wanton deed, if it be knowne. Hee replied. There nothing happened this day (most soueraigne Princesse) but was atchieued vnder the name of your excellent belotte. And therfore, vndergoing it as yours, what difficultie could happen, which I might not vanquish, to eternize your glories. Ay me (strange Coriolano) were I assured thereof, what torment were so great, which I should not account a pleasure and most swete. But oh cruell grieve, it is thou that hast conspired with my malignant starres, to make mee explaine my will before I know how it will be accepted. Exceedingly content rested I, seeing you at the Fountaine, and conceived such delight, that therewith I lide, and euer shall possesse this mancion of my life: but if you knew or wold vnderstand, with what paines & græses it was intermixed, there were no heart of Diamond, walled with Adamant, but wold pittie my distresse.



### The third Booke of the third Part

He there ended, raining downe her chrystall rubie cheekes, such a sheuer of liquid pearle, as it expressed her soules sorow. It was not vnconsidered by the Brittain youth, for he was M. of Loues schole. A thousand times cursed he himselfe, complaining against the blinde guidresse of unhappinesse, reuoluing many inconueniences, the least whereof were worse then death: for if he yeld to the Ladies will, hee sees the wrong he offers to his Lyriana, and if he do it not, hee feares she is resolved for aye to keepe him there. Both things hee ponderated wisely in his minde, yet could not chuse which he might do, or how to excuse himselfe. Notwithstanding of these evils hee tooke the lesse, yet greatest, chusing rather to suffer a liuing death, then to offend his deare Lyriana: and so hee answered contrarie to her expectation thus. I cannot but confesse (most excellent Princesse) how much you desire to saue me, altogether immeritable of your benefite, and if ending the aduenture in your name, may be thought any seruice, for euer bee it happie for bringing me to this estate, wherein if my worthlesse life sacrificed to confirme your content, may be any signe of thankfulness, behold me here readie to yeld it. With a heauie sigh the Lady answered. Woe be to thee vnforgotten Eufonisa, since in thy tenderest years thou hast begunne to feele the bitter chaunges of inconstant Fortune. Sure, sure I am, I shall remaine an example to all posterities through this vnseemly act, made worse by thy vnciuill usage. I do not require you cruell knight, nor will not haue you hazard your life in new daungers of new enterprises, onely I request, seeing I loue, (oh Gods that I should say so) you would do the like. Most faire of fairest Ladies (replied the afflicted youth) I am yours, and as such a one dispose of me, for none with more will shall procure your content. But yet doe not bestow your sacred faithfull loue on so meane a knight as I, both in conditions, blood, and estate, the which neither your Princely honour, fame, nor dignitie, both allow, nor my selfe, seeing and knowing your loving choise, bound by deserts vnto your worthinesse may permit, without infringing the constant lawes of faith, hospitallitie, and thankfulness. The which rather then I will commit, these my hands will I staine with my owne blood: for where there is such inequalitie of deserts, I should be hated and abhorred of all men, so to accomplish your languishing desire, and therefore haue patience (beauteous Princesse) for there is nothing better then it, to tollerate these hastie accidents in Loue.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Oh inhumane crueltie (said the weeping Ladie) how much doest thou extend thy power against me: what availes it thee, hard hearted knight, to procure my honour, by giving me a most untimely death: So shalt thou rather be called an homicide, then a man seruitor of Ladies: wel, well I wot, that my ouer liberall giuing thee my heart, moues thee to this strangenesse, knowing there is no reason in that best wher Loue commaundeth: which were it in me, I could not but see the increase of my honour by being silent: but with such vehemencie was my paine augmented, as I could no longer conceale it. And if thou knowest what it is to loue, this canst thou not iudge strange, when true affection could neuer yet be limited, and mine exceeding all others, forceth me to say: I onely liue to loue thee.

Here she paused, unable to procede further, nor the Prince to reply, the one intercepted by the griefe the poore soule indured: and the other, to see he caused it by being so obstinate and unrelenting to her requests. In the greatest confusion of the world was the Prince in, to see the Lady, so determined and amorous, and he himselfe bereaft of possibilitie to helpe her. I hope most beauteous Eufronisa (saide the Greeke) this conceived anger against mee will bee pacified, knowing how long since, and afoze this time, Tyrant Loue had made mee his tributarie vassall, delighting from mine infancie with those that were toucht with this euill, and if the consideration hereof may moue you knowing my weaknesse, to satisfie your desire, I hope you will desist from making your selfe guiltie of dishonour. Ay me (cruell knight answered she) now I le not so much complaine of thy disdain, as of my owne lightnesse, seeing what a capitall and hainous crime I haue ther, by committed, not onely gainst me, (yet that is no matter) but against all Ladies in the world besides, that onely for the name deserue to bee sued and intreated. But I (ay mee, that I) as ill accounting of that name, as of my pure honour, haue yelded to Loves triumph: rather become a suter, then reserue my selfe to bee sued vnto. And yet do not you thinke, but I perceiue your minde is still busied, imagining on an others absence, this and many other things I knowe by experience, since I first and last saue you at the fountaine. I do confesse it all, and also my reputations wacke, but a resolute mind in constancie, cannot leane to loue, nor will I otherwile, though it treble my sorowes eternally.



### The third Booke of the third Part

For this I did intreat thy helpe, and for this requested thy good will. But for all I am denied all, I wil till death persist in this my pure loue, and hope for no remedie, euermore cōplaining alike of my self, as of thy most inhumane barbarous cueltie. And therewith flung out of the chamber, bathing her chokes in water of her eyes. Shee sent him by Selia some Iuncates of her owne making to refresh him with, for she knew he had eaten nothing all that day. She intreated him to be answerable to the Princeesse loue, though it were but fained, for according to the græse that hath possesst her, I doubt she will not liue till morning: and consider what by her death wil be imputed to you, when you shall bee called the murthurer of so faire a Lady. I would to God (gentle Damzel) said he, it were in my power to redresse the Princeesse griefer: but you know, being heretofore sworne anothers, it is impossible I should please her, without committing the greatest fault that euer knight hath done. I wil no more importune you (said the damzell) for I shuld think my selfe much iniuried with your disdaine: how much then a Princeesse so faire and honourable. What is it (replied the Greeke) which hinders me: for should I do what she requires, it were but to satisfie her will against mine, which were the greatest wrong that might bee done her, for hauing pawned my faith vnto another, I cannot violate it to please her.

The damzel returned to her Ladie, leaving the Prince the most perplexed in the world, seeing himselfe in place where he could not vse his valor. Selia found the beauteous Eufronisa tumbling on her bed, drowned in teares. What sayest thou my deare Selia (said she to her) to the tyrannie wherewith that cruel knight doth vse me? what meanes may I vse? I my selfe know it not, nor doo thinke there is any: and to desist to loue him, thou seest is impossible: for neither my affection will permit, nor am I able to let it. Shee spied neare her the Crownes shee had wonne, and with a sigh that seemed to end her life, said. Oh glorious rewards to increase my harmes, you were the sole cause of my unhappinesse. Now that she thought the Greeke to bee in bed, not able to bee quiet, shee went alone vnto his chamber, whose sight made the Prince offer quickly to rise, shee stayed him, laying. Ile not haue thee vse me with any of these ceremonious courtesies, nor is my coming for them (thou cruellest knight that euer the heauens did create) but onely do I come, not to intreat of thee what thou shouldest of thy selfe procure,



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

procure, hadst thou thy perfect iudgement, saue to demand of thee two things, for with either of them shal I receiue some comfort, and beleue me, they bee not to thy pzeiudice, for were they, I would not require them.

Most worthy Princeesse, I nothing more desire of fortune answered he) then to haue that occasion offered, wherein I might indanger my life in your seruice, and would to God by losing it, I might cure your woes, then should you see with what willingnesse I would cast it on a squadron of deaths darts: therefore demand faire Ladie) what you will, for I wil at the instant accomplish it, beeing with the conditions you propounded. Without them (most cruell knight said she) who durst require any thing of thee, seeing thy krauingenesse and barbarous disdaine so extream against me. The first thing therefore that for me thou must do, is, to tell me who thou art, and the Ladies name to whom thou hast rendred that steely will of thine? The second thing I demand, this being knowne, for seeing I must be disdained and forlozne, I wil know whom I loue, and for whom I am not loued. Your excellencie (sacred Princeesse) so farre vgeth this matter, that I cannot thinke (replied Rosabel) why you wil know the thing, that being knowne, I am sure wil but augment your woes. They cannot be greater then them I haue already (did she answer) and therefore you must not breake with me, vnlesse you wil be as disloyal, as cruel. I am content to do it (said he) though sure I am of your hate when you knoe me, but that I may giue some ease vnto your grēfes, I will keepe promise. Know therefore (diuine Ladie) I am Rosabel of Britaine, son to the Greeke Prince Rosicler, and his Princeesse Oliuia, espoused vnto Lyriana Princeesse of Nyquea, and he that in nothing wil take more felicitie, then to procure your content. But will you not (excellent Princeesse) force mee beeing so enraged, to breake that faith I vowed on her hands to be true Louer. And now may you see what reason moued me to bee so obdurate, finding that any remedie from me, can but dishonour you.

And is it possible knight (said she) that you are sonne to the famous knight of Cupid, whose worthy deeds and loues haue with immortal fame filled all the world. Well, had I no other cause, but that you are sonne to such a father, it were sufficient to make mee loue you till death.

I onely



### The third Booke of the third Part

I only intreat your leaue, being alone & opprest with these extreme passions, I may disburthen my cares, by seeing the unhappie Eufronisa is yours; for so I shall receiue some rest. **Wherefo** he answered. **Most** soueraigne Ladie, **Princesse** of Sylephia, you see what little power is in me, to graunt you that license, for hauing no interest in my selfe, I cannot without her will graunt any such thing. **Then** (saide shee) tell me where she keepes, for I le send to her for it?

**So** enuious hath fortune bene to my content, that yet that I cannot say, not knowing it, because she rest her from my hands. **Well, well,** (replied the Ladie, chopping her words in the middle, and browning them with teares) because I aske, I see it is impossible I should knowe it, least I might receiue some little comfort thereby. **And** since the earth cannot affoord me any, the second thing that you for me must do, since you haue promised it, and bowed by the faith of a knight, is, that with this dagger you bereaue me of my despised life, seeing your sight gaue me so many deaths: do not denie it, for you haue promised it, and if you do, be sure I le trauell thzough the worlde, proclaiming your disloyaltie.

**And** so she drew forth a dagger from vnder her gowne, and with manly courage she put it in his hands, saying. **Thzough** my breast helpe forth a passage for my soule (most cruell knight) and yet I will not haue you make the wound vpon my heart, least you should hurt your selfe, modelde in the middelt thereof. **The** Creeke took it, so amazed, that he knew not where he was. **But** the resolute Ladie immediately discovered her breasts, the purest work that euer nature wrought. **Make** an end thou fellow-stealer of my libertie, to giue me som content by this expected death, and stain with blood this constant object of thine eyes.

**Oh** rare force of loue (saire Ladies) whose power consisting on extremes, makes all things else seeme madnesse, being compared to it. **Oh,** who would not be moued, seeing the Creeke holding the dagger in his hand, sitting on his bedde, yet ranging with his thoughts on Lyrriana, and the Ladie byging him to hasten the deadly stroke? **Oh** cruell inexecable knight (saide shee) wilt thou yet in this torment me? make an end at once, with one sweete death to end the many I suffer, Rosabell being the sole cause. **In** not doing this (most **Princesse** Ladie) I neither commit disloyaltie (saide the **Prince**) nor breake my word, for  
I le



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

He rather lose my life, then spill yours. So exceeding great was the grief that suddainly surpris'd her, that stopping her breath, and benumbing all her artires and usuall powers, she fell on the Greekes beasts. The greatest proofe of constancie was this, that ever knight was tried withall, and had hee continued it, no doubt but the example of it selfe had bene a sufficient memoizing marble to record a deed so famous. I do not wonder if he beganne something to yeeld, and ioyne his face to hers, (fairer then Apollos) halfe resolved to accomplish her request. Ere he was fully determined, which wanted but little, shee recovered her selfe, and seeing she was so bled, conceiued an vnhop'd ioy, feeling the heate of his cheekes on hers, neuerthelesse with many sighes shee said. How is it possible, tell me knight, thou shouldest still harbour such crueltie, as suffer me to languish in such paine, which thou mayest remedie by taking away the life I abhorre: What thou wert cruel and inextorable, farre more then Hyrcanian beasts, poore haplesse Eufro- nisa knowes it long sithence by experience. But that thou wantest loyaltie and faith to obserue thy word, who can beleue it of so mightie a Prince? I do confesse (faire Princesse) answered he, I do offend my selfe not doing it, yet the offence is greater against both, and worthily I then deserue the title of a cruell homicide: but that you may not longer complaine of me, grant time till to morrow, to be resolved in those extreames, and then I will reply to your content. It pleaseth me (answered she) although one daies stay will I feare kill me outright, with this vehement and cruell griefe. But I must suffer, being borne to doe it, and you disloyall and faithlesse knight, consider well what you determine, for seeing you haue denied me death, these hands shall be guiltie of it in your sight, when your pzeuention shall want speede to stay my execution. And ther vpon she went away, where had shee stayed, and once againe bzged it, no longer then that instant had been ynough to answer, for the Greeke resembled his Grandfather in these affaires: he had already pondz'd the Ladies beautie and her worthes, in such sort, that some of her distilling teares mollifying his obdured heart with such tendernesse, that he forgot Lyriana. His light vanished with her absence. With many wishes hee desired the happie appointed night. Little did he strue with his thoughts how to be resolved, for ere she went away, was the haughtie Brittain in minde agreed. With more rest sleepes Eufronisa then Rosabell.



### The third Booke of the third Part

Accidents be these ordered by the blinde God, vnderstood of none but him, although the soule suffers them, and yet cannot he, noz will con-  
seue by whose appoyntment it happens : a iust rewarde for his dis-  
loyaltie, since nothing should haue beene able to make him erre against  
his deare Lyriana, that with such generositie receiued him for her es-  
pouse, her Lord and husband. The Ladie returned glad with the hope  
of her expected good to Selia, and tolde her euerie thing that happened.  
With some content they entertained the expectation of her ioy. By  
chance, and it was a happie chance, the Ladie tooke one of the crowns  
that she had wonne in the Tent, and set it on her head, it was that  
which Belisa gaue her, to comfort her in her distresse. Hauing it on,  
she seemed farre more beautifull, and somewhat elder. The vertue of  
the Crowne beganne his operation. Selia was amazed, and plucking  
her by the arme, said. Wee still (Madame) for see the fairest aduenture  
in the world, for this Crowne hath power to disguise the face, and be-  
leeue me, you are not like Eufronisa. Peace soole (said the Ladie) it is  
but Loues deuise, and thy wittes conceits. When do not credit me (re-  
plied Selia) but the euidence wherewith I proue it. So she fetcht her  
a looking-glasse, and setting it befoze her, said. Here (Madame) may  
you see the Crownes effect. She could not but laugh, seeing her coun-  
tenance altered, and betwene them both they iarrer, whether she so  
were fairest or not. When she remembred Belisas words in the Tent,  
that there she should finde remedie in her greatest necessitie. Shee  
could not imagine whose semblance she represented. They would no  
longer deferre the knowledge of so happie businesse: so hand in hand  
they went into a gallerie, called the Ladies Treasurie, because therein  
were the pictures of most in the world. This was a curiositie the king  
for his pleasure had made. Many they saue most faire, and they  
were those that in Grecia then flourished: but passing further, they per-  
ceiued their deceit, finding Lyriana, whose beautie she possest. They  
read the title, which tolde them she was Princesse of Nyquea, to the  
greatest ioy that euer Eufronisa did conceiue. Shee embraced Selia,  
saying.

Oh my Selia, the heauens now will take my part, for knowe, the  
Lady that hath captiuated this knight, is she whom I represent ha-  
uing on this Crowne: and by this deuise, meane I (nothing thanking  
him) to fulfill my desire, although he haue promised me an answer to  
morrow.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

morrow. And if I can, with this deceit Ile craue no answere, seeing it must come with so many paines and grones. And see my Selia, how my suspicion at the fountaine is verified, that he was not him hee said, for he is son vnto the famous knight of Cupid, and betrothed to this Princesse, and so I thinke I may stand excused for this my bolde-  
nelle.

Well knew she it, that in the enchanted Tent tolde me, that though ther by I should obtain greatest good, yet would it be intermixt with infinite troubles. Joyfully returned the two Ladies vnto their chamber, expecting the next morne, to deceiue him that was already deceiued, repenting him of the disdaine hee shewed. The newe crowned Ladie entred his lodging, to giue him the good time of the day. The Greeke had scarce seene her, when falling in the deceit, he tooke her to bee Lyriana, and with great tendernesse he ran to her, saying. May it be deare Ladie, that in time of such sorrow you would be pleased to glad my heart with your presence. How ill should I requite your loue deare Lord (saide the mistaken Ladie) if I did not procure your content, being able as at this time, and though I be with you, yet none knowes of it.

The Greeke Louer embraced her, thinking he enioyed his Lyrianas companie, which made Eufronisa most glad to see the effect of the pleasant deceit. What happened by this meeting, is left to honest consideration. Onely Galtenor saith, the Ladie forgot her paines, enioying many daies the fruition of the Greeke Louers bedde vnder that disguise, telling him that a wise man her great friend, had for some time fetcht her out of the enchantment, to accompany him in that distresse. Much bound did the Prince thinke himselfe to him for so good a turne. So farre wrought the vertue of the Crowne, that all the time shee enioyed him by that deceit, the Greeke could comprehend no more, but tooke what fortune offered him.

At length Eufronisa iudging it reason to let him go, feeling her selfe with childe, conferred with Selia that approued it. Shee tooke off the Crowne, kissing it a thousand times, for hauing enioyed by it her harts content. She had no sooner set it by the other, when it was presently taken away, not knowing by whose hands.

A voyce shee heard, which thus comforted her. Haue patience Ladie, for the heauens will haue it so, and till you knowe  
the



### The third Booke of the third Part

the fruite that by this deceit shall rise, neuer looke to see it more. So some as it was taken away, the Greeke thought all that he had past but a dreame, hauing scarce the remembrance thereof. What time hee had so spent he knew not, but stayed for the Ladies conning to giue her his answere, which shee determined to refuse, because shee would not be bound vnto him for it. She entred his chamber with her damzell, thus speaking. How are you determined (most cruell knight of the Flowers) that according to your resolution, she may liue that loues you. He answered. I am sure (excellent Princeesse) you haue had time to consider the wrong you do me, to inforce me breake my word: yet I am yours, and will bee till the death, and so may you dispose of mee at your pleasure. Whereto she thus returned. Euer since (most glorious Prince of Greece) that Fortune or the powers of Loue made my heart obediēt to your will, I onely procured but a graunt from your mouthe, by so many meanes as you haue seene, solely deuised to affect you, and that you might knowe I loue you. And since you are assured thereof, and now to comfort my sorowes in your absence, I wil haue you leaue with me some remembrance, and let it be your dagger, for which you shal haue mine, that wherewith I intreated you to end my life, which now I keepe to imploy it in your loue: and beleue me (braue Prince) while this soule shal haue power to breathe, this affection shall neuer decay.

And therewith, with exceeding ioy she embraced him, and taking his ponyard, she gaue him hers, bidding him prepare his departure against the next morning. The Prince did so, somewhat abashed to haue been so importuned. Hee tooke his leaue of the Ladies not without many teares, for trust mee, hee was beloued in the highest degree that euer knight was. A verie rich Jewell the Ladie gaue him at his departure. All armed in precious armour, and mounted on a lustie Courser, giuen him by Eufronisa, hee went out of the famous Cittie of Goltuerge, whose departure she tooke most heauily: yet some comfort she conceived to be big with childe by him.

Straight the two Ladies beganne to deuise how they might keepe close Eufronisas trauell, who being a straunger to such matters, grieued thereat. Onely this consolation she tooke, to looke from the toppe of a high turret towards Grecia, whither her ioy was gone, calling it a beauiē land to bring forth such fruite.

Thus



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Thus this beuotious Lady passed away the season vntill her time of deliuerie, which being the first, she felt extreamely. She was deliuered of two boyes, the fairest that the heauens created: for he which was first brought forth, had on the face of a Lady, fairer then the sunnes Splendor in his pride. The other a heart thrust through with a dagger, with the wound so fresh as it seemed then to bleed. Selia shewed them her, saying. *Keiopce faire Princeesse*, with the issue sprung from that deceit, which is such, that it frees you from any fault. The tender mother embraced and kist them, saying. Oh, may the powerfull heauens deare children of my heart, let you liue to know your warlike father: for though he vsed me with all crueltie, yet are you his sonnes. Blesse you may the Gods, & make you as happie as I am unhappie, although I may now call my selfe the happiest on the earth, onely by being your mother. So carefull Selia tooke them away, and through a secret doore in the garden, she gaue them to the old ancient knight, to see them nursed in some Village. At their carriage away, a thousand kisses and blessings did the louing mother giue them, as diuining the long time shee should be ere againe she saw them.

With much care did the olde knight carrie them to a Village, where he had prepared a nurse for them. What hee might passe more couertly, he crost the fforest, bearing the children in two baskets on a litle Asse, by the way hee rested, and tooke downe the boyes to quiet them from crying. Scarce had he done, when a chafed Lyon ran thitherward, being hunted by shepheards, with their dogs. The knights age and the Lyons sight, put him in such feare as he fell downe in a trance. As then the cruel beast ment not to take any pray, but to escape his pursuers.

In this manner lay the old man and the children crying for hunger, when by great chaunce a mightie Lord dwelling on the confines of Sylepsia, past that way with his wife, that had bene at the Cittie to see the triumphes there. With them was an auncient Lady, lately deliuered of a childe, that dyed in Golthuerge. So soone as the Lords wife saw the children, and hauing none her selfe, tooke such affection on the babes, seeing they were wonderfull beuotie, that she commaunded the other Lady carefully to nurse and bring them vp.

In this manner were the two Infants carried by this Lord,



## The third Booke of the third Part

and tendered as his owne. He that had the Ladies face, they named Clarabell. And the other with the wounded heart, Leobello. Who so grew in yeares and beutie, that they were accounted chilozen of the Godds.

Where we will leaue them, nourished by the good knight Sergio, for so was hee called, omitting also their afflicted mothers sorrow for theyr losse: and a while must remember the mightie displaying knight Claridiano of the Sphere, already departed from Croatia.

### CHAP. XVII.

What aduenture the Prince *Claridiano* met in the Ile of *Crete*, where he disinchaunted his Vnckle *Claramant*.



Of a while (faire Ladies) I am constrained to leaue Loues amorous discourses, and trust mee, with some græse: but hauing to treat of many things, I must describe them with diuers styles. And now the warlike Greeke, with an Adamantine power, attractts me to lighten him from the darke center of oblivion: who departing from the most bewteous Venus, and gallant Laysa, lanchted into the Adriaticke sea, downe the which, hee Navigated foure dayes: and the fift, hee crossed into the Affrican, and happening on no aduenture deserving memorie, he put into the Carpathian and Egeum seas: where sayling some fiftene dayes, his enchanted Barke ran it selfe on land, in the Ile of Crete, (now Candy) the happiest and fertilest in all those partes, because Loue was bozne and raigned there.

At thozē leaped he and Palisandro his Squire, and landed theyr horses. The commonest way that they coulde iudge, they tooke, and did ride aboue an houre, meeting with none to learne in what land they were. Under a high Wyne they dismounted to rest and passe the heate of the afternone, eating of such prouision as Palisandro had carried from the Barke.

The pleasantnesse of the countrey much delighted the Prince, although



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

although it was such little comfort to the paines he suffered, that were it not for Palisandros consolations, hee had without doubt run into excessive dangers.

As he sat downe, certaine shepheards came that way, driving their flocks to feed on the downes, belowe a hillocke neare to that place. They told him, how he was in the famous Ile of Creet, of which hee had heard so many things. It much pleased him, to heare the shepheards name the aduventure of the three Pyres: for though hee had heard thereof, he neuer knew it to be in Crete: to bee assured thereof, he demanded of them thus. Can you tell me discrete shepheards, the beginning of this aduventure? who made it, and for whom? That which now is said thereof (Syr knight) is, that not many yeares since, this aduventure appeared here, where (it is said) there is onely one of the famous Princes of the world inchaunted: whose strength is also given out farre to exceede Theseus, so celebrated in this Ile, for killing of the Minotaure. So difficult is the entrance to the Fountaine, called of the three Pyres, that none, though many mightie knights procured it, haue arriued thither. Onely there is one entrance, so surely guarded, as it is thought impossible to passe that way by force of armes, all the rest is immured with so high a wall of stones, cut so smothe, that there is no ascending nor entrance, but through the difficult passage, which is a little beneath your hill. I do greatly thanke you (kind shepheards) for your courteous relation, and will requite it in any thing I may.

So they went away, leauing him conferring with his squire about the procuring thereof, for he much desired to know the Prince that was within. The squire would not gainsay it, knowing his valor sufficient for greater matters.

Then hauing a while rested, they followed the shepheards direction, within a little time they came in sight of the stupendious Edifice. Neuer before had the Prince seene a thing more worthy admiration then it: for it seemed to checke the most highest Cloudes. The passage to it, was along a faire Walley, a stones cast in length, whose entrance was through a Lane of mightie trees, whose innumerable thicke bzanches ioyning together, did well declare the difficult passage.

With



## The third Booke of the third Part

Without any feare Trebatios haughtie Nephew arrived thither, not far fro the Groue that leaded to the Fountaine, of which the aduenture tooke his name. The breadth of the way that the Prince went, would suffer but six knights to go it together: the which, as one prepared to the fight, the mightie youth traced. So comming to the end of the Lane where the Wallies entrance began, he was not so amazed with the battell he had against the hellish beast at Merlins sepulchre, as seeing here one of the fearefullest winged Serpents that might be. He stayed himselfe, to bethinke him by what meanes hee might combat with the ugly monster. In the end he resolved to be best on foote, the better to vse his nimblenesse and weapons, so did he dismount, giving Palisandro his horse, and taking his Lance in his hand, and with his heart in heauen, he marched towards the infernall monster: the which seeing him come, stretched her self on the ground, and raising halfe her body, hissing fearfully, crept against the Greeke, who with that discreetnesse he vsed in all his affaires, setting himselfe strongly on his left leg, hurled his Launce at her. Upon her impenitrable scales wherewith she was armed, it fell, rebounding backe as if it had lighted vpon a Rocke. Neuerthelesse, it made her bend her head as lowe as the ground. With a nimble leape he got within the beasts Cabbin, where there began such hideous outcries, that he was about a thousand times to turne backe, but iudging it base cowardise, with his sword drawne he expected the Serpents coming. Neuer was that He witnesse of a more brauer Combat. In it the Greeces dexteritie auailed him, for the edge of his sword can make no impression in her. He found it, when at his first assault, he gaue her a mightie blowe on the scales. Whipping the earth with her taile, came the furious Serpent against the Greeke youth: and being neare him, with her mouth he would haue hoysed him aloft: he defended himselfe stepping aside, so scaping her clawes, but not her taile, wherewith shee gaue him such a yerke, that she slong him farre without the entrance he had won.

More furious then shee ryed the Greeke Hercules bzuiled with the fall, and with hastie paces hee ranne againe vnto the entrance, but there hee founde the Serpent. Fearelesse, the valiant Greeke approached to her, holding his sword sure betweene his hands. He had scarce made an offer, when the diuellish furious Serpent snatcht at his shield with one of herfangs, dragging him thereby,

within



## of the Mirroure of Knighthood.

within her enchanted pale, vntill she brake the girts. It greeued not the Prince to be there, nor yet to haue lost his shield, but with his sword in both hands, stayed for her that furiously came flying to him; she stretcht forth her paw to take him with her sharpe clawes. With much heed the Prince expected her, and being neare, with a flourish, he gaue her a most strong blowe. It was venturous, and that which gaue him the victorie. For discharging it very neare her breast, where the scales were not so hard, it mortally wounded her. No hellish furie is now comparable to her being wounded, for striking the earth, she flew to the Greeke, whose courage and strength could not now defend him from her tayle: for therewith she strook him to the ground, where also he could not scape her tallents. His armor saued his life, though some of the ioynts ran in to his flesh. The Greeke in this extremitie forgot not his dagger, which drawing forth with his left hand, he stabbed it thise vnder her necke, with which wounds she let him go. But she had no sooner done it, when she returned vpon him, opening wide her infernall mouth. He strongly held his left arme, and holding the point of his dagger vpwards, he ran it into her mouth, whereon she thinking to pray, twirt her iawes, shee thrust it into her bzaines. With some trouble the Greeke drew it forth, glad of the good successe: yet befoze he got cleare, or that she fell, with her taile she gaue him the last yerke, in such manner, that had she bene able to second an other, he had bene in great daunger. He fell on the ground, bolding much blood through his mouth. The like to that the Greeke Louer neuer had receiued. He rose, because carelesly he would not lose what his valour assured. And saw the serpent weltring in her owne goare, till by little and little she dyed, to the Greeces exceeding content: who to rest, late him downe vnder a loftie oake that grew in the end of that Lane, and tooke off his helme to take the ayze, that then freshly blew. On the bark of the Wake he saw a scrolle, which he read thus.

To thee Knight, whom Fortune hath so fauoured, as ouercomming the feareful keeper of the entrance vnto the three Pyped Fountaine to let thee here arriue to rest, haue courage, for it must ende what yet doth want.



### The third Booke of the third Part

The words did not so much feare him, as the doubt whether hee should haue to do with knights on whom he might better shew his valour. Long would not Archysiloras Louer rest, so presently rising he tooke his shield, and casting it at his backe, went downe the Valley. Great comfort did hee receiue with the byrds swete harmony that welcommed him, where Philomelas sad complaints increased his, and the Larkes swete song (the mornings Herault) eased his trauell. A more pleasanter place the Prince had neuer seene, for besides the florrie Tapestry, the diuersitie of all manner of frutesfull trees were so many, and in such order placed, that Nature mistresse of inuention, seemed there to striue with Art (the adozner of her wants) for soueraigntie. Cuery thing the prince considered not, omitting the dear remembrance of his soules commandresse, sayre Archysilora. He made such haste, that about the second houre after mid-day, hee arriued to the famous Fountaine, whose proud making, much amazed him. For the Pypes through which the water ran, were three mightie sauaiges, cut in Alabaster, whiter then the snowe (vppon the Appenines) all gilded and enamelled. Under the three pypes was a faire great Cesternes, where the little byrdes flew to drinke. Before it stood a brazen Piller with this inscription.

The vnkowne Castle shall be seene by none, vntill the dispayring Lyon, freeing the passage to his owne bloods cost, shall arriue vnto this Piller: where to passe forward, he must leaue heere some peece of his Armor.

The Prince a good while doubted which it should be. In the ende he resolved to leaue his shield. He hung it on the Piller, and straight went on, discovering before him the stately buildings, so high, that they seemed to reach vnto the middle region of the ayre, it was all so couered with Golde, that it scarce admitted any sight. There was but one doore, the which the Prince found fast locked, whereat with the pummell of his sword he knocked very hard. At the noyse, a window opened as bene the gate, out of which there looked a Lady all in Armor, sauing the head. The sight astonished the Greeke, thinking it was Archysilora, who with some anger, said. What seeke you (audacious knight) for none may enter here, but that liues to loue without hope: halfe trembling,



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

bling, the Prince answered. I do confesse, how I offend you (most excellent Queene of Lyra) by demanding a reward for my faith sacrificed to thy gallantnesse: but yet if with death or endlesse dishonour you will still be reuenged on me, appoint the manner of the vilest death you can, and I will bee hee that shall most willingly performe that sacrifice.

It is well knight (replied the Lady) now you have committed a fault, you thinke by confession to extenuate your deserved punishment. So overcome with contemplation of his Lady stood the Greeke, that he heard not the opening of the gate, with as much horroz, as if a peale of ordinance were discharged. Through it, came forth two knights richly armed: and also after them, followed the beloteous Claramant, apparelled in cloath of Golde, whose presence would haue made Narcissus leaue his selfe-loue to stay and dote on him.

Having their Launces in their rests, and as swift as the winde, they ran against the carelesse Prince, that was busied gazing on his beloued Archysilora. So valiant were his two aduersaries, and so desirous to hit him, that they lost not their encounters, which were so mighty and sudden, that when he would haue warded them, hee found himselfe on the ground, so sore brused with the fall, that he could not rise when he would. So eager is not an Eagle to defend he yonglings, as the knights turned vpon the Prince, and both at once againe hit him, but being warned by the former negligence, stoutly resisted them, that they could not ouerthrowe him, but made him stagger backwards. So skilfull were the knights of the Castle, that the one seeing the ill successe of their encounter, like a second Mars, flung his Lance at him. He mist him: for in the middlest of his amorous brest, hee gaue him the greatest blow that euer he receiued, and was forced to stay himself with his left hand on the ground. Perier before did the Prince iudge himselfe in more danger, seeing the knights so active and strong.

They could not so preuaile with their dexteritie, but the Greeke with his, reached him that hurled his Lance, such a blow, that senselesse hee strooke him on his horse necke. Hee ran to plucke him down, but he was stayed in the attempt: for the other knowing hee could not come in time to rescue him, settled himselfe on his styrops,



### The third Booke of the third Part

and out of his arme let his Lance flie, like a killing Comet: it strooke him on the one side of the closing of his armor, where Galtenor saith, it wounded him a litle: but Lirgandeo affirmeth, he was felled to the earth, yet howsoever he could not perfoyme his attempt: for all he much procured it. Now the two companions being spearelesse, drew forth two swords unequalled in all the world, and with them arrived vpon the Greeke, that expected them: A flourish discharged one vpon his helme, which he greenously felt, and the other somewhat lower thrust at him fiercely: which hee dearely did aby: for Claridiano more furious then thundering lightning, auoided it stepping aside, leauing him hanging vpon his horse. Thinking to haue slaine him, with both hands he laid on his shoulders. The Prince imagined he had cleft him in the middelt, but he could not be vanquished on horsebacke: who therefore returned with more courage then before, and began to helpe one another against the Prince, with such strength and lightnesse, as he thought himselfe in manifest danger, doubting the euent of the battell. So one assaulted him with his Coursers swiftest course, which carrear he lost: for Archifiloras Lower a litle yeelding sidewaies, cast his strong arms about him, and mangre all his forces, pulled him from his saddle to the ground, much glad therof, for so he might better deale with them. Who were so instructed to aide one an other, that he which was on foot, wold neither lose nor step from Claridiano, till he saw his companion run at him, and then with a swinge hee turned him against the horse back, who encountred him so strongly, that he made him stumble backwards like to fall.

And more to helpe him downe, he on foote thrust at him in his amaze, two such strong points, that Claridiano neuer did what he was now inforced vnto, for neither courage nor valoure preuailling, he fell downe. But like Anteus to touching on the earth, he rose fresher and fiercer, that he on horsebacke escaped not free for his encounter: for as he turned, Claridiano as wrathfull as a hungrie Lyon, let drive at him with so puissant a blowe, that whether he would or no, hee felde him from his Saddle downe to the grassie plaine: where it added pleasure to content, seeing the fortunate and vnconquered Greeke enter, and retire as he would. Wearied he had them, although himselfe was no lesse: for they of the Castle were of the valiantest in the world, and about that matter, would not refuse Mars his challenge.

Crossing



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Crossing his sword inwards, the one assailed the Greeke, it was but an offer, for going toward it, he stayed his arme, and bearing it lower, strooke him on the legs, and on the left thigh he gaue him the greatest blow that he had receiued in all that battle: for though it did not wound him, yet it put him in such paine that he could not stir that legge. The good effect of the stroke, perceiued they of the Castle, and that they might take the aduantage, befoze the paine left him, they began to hammer him with moze strength and speede, then the Cyclopes did when they forged Aeneas Armoz. The Prince much feared being so lame, but seeing it concerned him no lesse then his life, dragging that legge, performed wonders.

The first Battle that euer Claramant had scene was this: the which he iudged to himselfe would be the last, so fierce and terrible it was. He said, moze cunning skill nor valour could not be wished in one knight, the what he in the yallow shewed. It was a matter worthy the Prince, for as he was, he neuer suffered them to close within him, though they nothing else procured, stil keeping them out with his untollerable cruell blowes, which made them kisse the earth, sometimes with their hands, and then with their knees. And againe other times, all at once.

In the ende he flung at him that had wounded him: quicke he was, but Archyfiloras Champion was possessed with extreamest of his rage, and therefore reached him on the toppe of his Helme, in such manner, that in despite of him, he tumbled him on the greene brest of his mother earth. At him with a thrust ranne the other, which Clardiano striking aside, hee strooke him with both handes on his armes, that he could no moze vse his sword. Hee closed with him, and holsing him from the ground, flung him downe on his backe, neare where his Companion was. Uppon them with his naked Dagger buffeted the Louer: for hauing exceedingly incensed him, he forgot the pitie and accustomed clemency which he vsed towards his vanquished.

Befoze him kept the betweneous Claramant, saying. To ende a Combat with death (most valiant knight) whose conquest is so manifest, wil rather blemish the Victors victorie, then dignifie his fame: therefore I pray you, giue me those knights as by you are vanquished.



### The third Booke of the third Part

The haughtie Greeke lifted vp his head to answere him, for throught the anger of the fight, he had not noted the Donzell. So looking on him now, he was astonished, thinking he sawe himselfe: for were hee a litle elder, none could haue distinguished them, nor yet from the Emperour Alphebo, for they resembled so much one another, that in the beginning he verily iudged him to be his father, which opinion his tender yeares frustrated. And yet supposing him some kinsman of his, did graunt it, and would haue done had it bene farre moze. But that was inough, had he bene any other then Claridiano, to make him neuer returne to Greece. For scarce had the Donzell rayled them with his hand, when as freshe as in the beginning, they let flie at him, together two such blowes, that they made him kneele on the ground.

It extreamly greeued him to be so mocked, yet was not he angry against the Donzell, imaginiking throught lacke of iudgement he had done it. He animated himselfe to this new Combat, although with some doubt to see his aduersaries numbler and lustier then at the first, and himself somewhat weary. Claspings his sword strongly in his hand, he went against them, making them knowe, nothing could bereaue him of his assured victorie. So closing with the one, with his shoulders he thrust him from him, like a loosened arrow from a bowe. And with a leape he turned on the second. His speed could not saue him, for the furious Greeke cut away halfe his helme, with part of his head. This blow gladdened him, resolving to deny the Donzell any thing he should aske within that place. By this arriued the other, but what auailles it, for the Greeke Mars giues no blowe which they feele not within their fleshe. They had kinde Ladies in this second fight lost the vertue of the Enchantment, only helping themselves with their natural strength, which was very great. And yet it preuailes not against him that was borne a Conqueroz.

End this cruel warre would the Greeke, calling himselfe coward to prolong it so long: And auoyding one of their blowes, he ran at him with the bruest thrust that in all his life he executed: for piercing shield, breast and backe, hee tumbled him dead at his fete, to Claramans great admiration. The second incouraged himselfe for all he was alone and soze wounded, it was but a little lengthning of his life, to endure a moze cruell death. For the Prince hauing Fortune by the Front,  
Greeke



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

stroke at the top of his helme, yet not with the strength he might, but he peelding backe his head, couered it with the shielde: whereat the Greeke turning his arme, discharged it on his thighes so mightily, that almost he cut one cleane off. Befoze he could settle himselfe, he ran vpon him, and with incredible haste (least Claramant should interrupt him) he reast him of his life: himselfe remaining so wearie, that his legges could not then sustaine him.

All his life time he most esteemed this victorie, for it cost more labor, more blood, and more trouble, then any other of that quallitie. He went towards the beauteous Donzell, elder then him by sixe yeares, but hauing suffered no cares, noz paines, noz loue passions, made him seeme yonger then his cousin: who tooke off his helme, discouering that Mars his countenance of his. Either reioyced to see the other, thinking they saue one another in a glasse. So Claridiano spake first, saying. I intreat you (faire Donzell) so the heauens make you happie in all attempts, to tell me the cause of your being within so defended a place, and also who you are: for considering how dearly your sight hath cost me, (although I thinke it well bestowed) you are bound to tell me: whereto Claramant replied.

Of neither (sir knight) may I resolue you, vnlesse I receiue the order of Chivalrie, and in faith it not a little grieues mee, that I cannot herein satisfie you. Such desire had the Greeke to know him, as hee was determined to giue it him: but remembering how hee was befoze mocked, thus answered. Nay sir, if your knowledge must cost so much, I will not more wish it, for in not performing as yet your request, I am sure I do you some seruiue. Why then (said Claramant) fare you well, for Ile retorne vnto my Castle, and in faith, sozrie to bee denied in my first request I euer made to any knight. So with me from hence (worthy Donzell, returned the Greeke) and you shall receiue it with such solemnitie, as is due vnto your person. The gallant youth answered not, but in great haste returned to the Castle, where had hee entered, his cousin had not bene able to haue fetcht him thence, for being with armes, none of all his kinsmen did excell him. But the wise Nabato knowing it concerned his sonne Don Eleno, with his charmes and exorcismes, clowded with mists and fogges all those shining buildings, so astonishing the Donzel, that thinking to enter the Castle, hee mist his way, and tooke it towarde the fountaine of the three pyppes, where being a dyle, and hearing the waters running noyse, he drank.

But



## The third Booke of the third Part

But hee had scant toucht it, when such horrible and hideous noyse was heard, that Claramant was halfe afraide. The ende of that adventure consisted on Claramants arriuing to the fount, to take dolone the shield which his cousin had hung on the pillar, on condition of his passage.

So all that mightie edefice vanished away, made by the great Magitian Lirgandeo, as the second part related, wherein hee had inchan- ted this valiant Prince, when he took him from the barbarous Scy- thians that belonged to Bramarant, who stole him from his mother in the woods of Grecia, as in the third booke of the first part is expres- sed. Alone did the Greeke finde himselfe in a broad field, and Palisan- dro by him with the horses. So looking for the Donzel, he spied him in great haste entring into a thicke wood of trees, that stood in the val- ley. He rose and went thither, at such time as Claramant onely with his shield, had thrust himselfe within, whose sight he quickly lost. Ac- company him hee would, but it was in vaine, for a strong contrarie winde blew him out, where he was forced to expect the successe of that adventure reserved to the Donzel.

### CHAP. XVIII.

How *Claramant* entred into *Theseus* walke, where he wonne his ar- mour : and what else happened.



Within the intricate groue (swæte Lady) wee left the Donzel Claramant, whose disinchantment being exceedingly desired of euerie one, made mee (to please those desires) a breuiate the present combats, although Lyrgandeo doth not a little enlarge his discourse therein. But my selfe wishing no lesse his enlargement, then any other, forced me to enter him with such breuitie, within the way- confused wood, wherein hauing lost himselfe, Trebatios sonne wan- dred thre daies alone, onely with the Greekes shield. This was that crooked intricable mansion, in whose contriuing, Dedalus at Minos petition, king of Crete, did shew the sharpnesse of his skill and witte, wherein the famous Minotaure was inclosed: whose originall sprung from



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

from the beastly blinde loue of Pasiphae the Queene, for the king being employed in the Trojan warres, she with inhumane appetite lusted after a white bull, that was among her herds: and not knowing how to accomplish so foule a deed, shee recommended it to Dedalus: who with his wit, being the Oracle of his age, contriued an artificiall Colue of wood, wherein he put the Queene, couered with the hyde of another which the Bull most followed, by which meanes she satisfied her lust, ingendring the Minotaure which the Poets faine: and yet Arsanio in the fourth of his Problemes, approues with wonderfull arguments, the possibilitie of the act: and saith that at the time of the monsters birth, returned the king, who would not, although the Queen died of the labour kil the beast, but rather commanded him to be kept in a place most difficult to come forth, reseruing him there, for what hee further intended. For making cruell warre vpon the Athenians, in reuenge of his sonne Androgeus death, whom they slew, hee compelled them in satisfaction thereof, yearely to send him seuen men, and as many maides, to be deuoured by the Minotaure. Whose forme was both of man and Bull, and of proportionable bignesse. For some few yeares lasted this cruell custome, vntill Theseus comming, whose strength was nothing inferiour to Hercules, in so much, that some will haue him to be he.

Being young, he ayded Hercules against the Amazones, whom after they had conquered, he married their Queenes sister. He slew the Tyrant of Thebes, that would not burie his dead kinsmen. And in the Marathonian fields hee slew the wilde Bull that wasted all Attica. This was hee that rauisht Helena the first time, whose tender age might then well acquit her of the error. Hee descended into hell with Perithons, to steale Proserpyne, where he lost his friend. This by lot was sent to Crete as food vnto the Minotaure. But the beauteous Ariadne affecting the youth, gaue him a clue of threed, which should (after he had slaine the beast) lead him out.

He ingratfully requited both her loue and life good turne, leaving her alone in Niosia Ile, which act of vnthankfulnesse so greued the most wise Dedalus, that he enchanted him in the labozinth, in recompence of his ingratitude, suffering eternall paines yet to seue, in respect of his deserts. He moze enlarged the mazed house, that his libertie might be moze difficulter. The which he made so singuler, as at the



### The third Booke of the third Part

least it equalled that in Egypt, and far excellling king Porſenas which he builded in Italie for his ſepulchre: which was ſo fearefull, that hee commaunded beſore he dyed, he ſhould not being dead, be there left without company, and ſo euery yeare, many being put therein, were inforced finding no way out, to aſſociate him in his death. In this inextricable wood, did Dedalus place Theſeus, where the Greeke youth had loſt himſelfe, not knowing how, nor which way he had got in there. It greeued him not, for his inuincible heart incouraged him to greater matters. The fourth day of his wandring thzough the wood, hee came vnto a faire walke, whose Couert of greene Iuie, reaching from tree to tree on eyther ſide, was ſo thicke, that neither ſun nor ſtarre could penetrate it at no time, and therefore it was naturally moſt colde, beſides that Dedalus with his ſkill had made it moze, when there he left the ingratefull Thebian, with freezing colde to extinguiſh the burning heate, where with he loued Phedra, forſaking her ſiſter that had giuen him no leſſe then his life, helping him to the bottome of the threed, by which he iſſued out of the Labozinth. So he indured exceeding torments, minding on nothing, ſaue that none ſhuld paſſe that way, fearing that ſome one woulde vanquiſh the Minotaure, that kept ſomewhat moze within.

Scarce could the Greeke Prince endure the coldneſſe of the Lane, and but that he iudged it baſe feare, he had returned backe: yet encouraging himſelfe, valiantly with his ſhield, he paſſed on ſorwards, till he met with the mightie Theſeus, clad al in moſt rich greene armor, garniſhed of tawnie Lyons, beſet with many rich and vnualueable ſtones.

A ſtoote ſtood the fierce Athenian, leaning againſt a mightie ſteele battle-are, with a ſword girded at his ſide, looking with ſuch a ſterne aſpect, as Mars had feared him. But Trebatios ſonne bozne to maiſter him, vndauntedly ſtept to him with ſuch courteſie, as he thought his perſon merited, ſaying. Moſt valiant knight, I woulde gladly finde a paſſage from a place ſo yzkeſome as this, and if along this Lane be the way, I intreate you ſuffer me freely to paſſe. With admiration of his gallant diſpoſition, did Hercules companion thus reply. Moſt willingly faire Donzell, I woulde pleasure you in this, or any thing elſe, but my ingratitade bzinging me hither, forceth mee to let none paſſe this way, onely to haue moze company (being alone) to aſſociate me.

And



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

And so may you seeke an other way, although I beleue there is none but this. Why then (said our new Mars) I shall be constrained to procure it, and so rest nothing beholding to you for it. Whereupon as if hee were better armed then the Athenian, well couering himselfe with his shield, paced towards him, who became more fiercer, then when he descended into the earthes blacke Center, seeing the boldnesse of the youth so young and armozlesse, presuming to win what onely was committed to his strength, in so many dangers and haughtie enterprizes approued. He raised aloft his are, thinking to haue cleft him in the middell. But the gallant youth leaping aside, meant not onely to make him lose his blowe, but to close with him, hauing an eye vnto his sword, hoping that if he had it, to assure his victorie therewith.

At this time he mist of his intent, for Theseus was none of those that admitted any such brauados: but in the middell of the stroke, before his aduersarie could enter, he stayed the are, discharging such a blowe on his shield, with the point, that he inforced him backe swifter then hee came, with greater paine on his brest, for the shield striking there, made him almost breathlesse. He had not effected this blowe, when with the blade he offered an other. He flourishd it aboue his head so mightily, that had not the Greeke fallen on his, he had bene cleane parted in two. He saw himselfe within deathes clauves, for the very wind the weapon yeilded in his passage, was inough to strike downe an other lesse valiant then he. He would not then ketch at his sword, because the other ouerwharted him in it, but rather with the nimble skill his tutors had taught him, seemed to stay a blowe, lifting his shield on high, the Athenian beleuing that he would, and that therewith he should terminate that controuerfie, well settled on his left leg, hee let fly at him a downeright blowe. It is credible, that hitting him with the are, he had diuided not him alone, but the strongest Roke. He that should liberate the Scythian Lady, would not so trust to his shield: for as the are descended, swifter then thought, he closed with him, thrusting himselfe vnder his armes, and with his, he astonished him with a blowe running his shield against his head, whereat the other for feare of giving backe, resisted him with all his strength, and so ayding his left leg outwards, our new warrio: met with the swords handle, the which without more adu, he easily drew forth, whose blade yeilded such splendor as the Prince was amazed.



### The third Booke of the third Part

It was many years since y<sup>e</sup> Athenian had not seen his naked sword, which now viewing in his enemies power, there is no Lyon in fiercenesse comparable to him. Speeds would the Greeke youth trie his conquered weapon befoze he got from him, discharging it with all his strength on that side it hung. His armor it cut not, for the world had none better, but it so tormented his legges and thigh, that he could not stand thereon. So Claramant stepping from him, saide. Now shalt thou know (knight) how much better it had beene for thee, to haue let me freely passe, and keepe thy weapons, then to bee without them, for they now shall make me way. Why then stay (saide hee) discourteous youth, and thou shalt see whether the hauing of my sword can defend thee from Theseus wrath, at whose presence al Ploros kingdome trembled. And so he strooke at him a most mightie blow. He could not so defend it, but it fell vpon one side of his shield, cutting it away: and made him thrice turne about. But suddainly he recovered, and firmed himielfe against his aduersarie, that with his axe poynt came against him. He turned away and scapt it, discharging his sword vpon his helme. It sounded like a bell, making a displeasent musicke chattering of his teeth.

Ere Theseus could recouer himielfe, he gaue him another, it was it which gaue him the victorie, by the passing with the poynt betweene the closing of his armor. Cutting his priue coate of male, the sharpe blade entred vnto his flesh: had he not feared the axe, and a little forwarder thrust his arme, he had slaine the Athenian: yet it was the first time that the ingratfull Louer sawe his owne blood, whose sight added such furie to his furie, that now hee will not procede like a skilfull knight, but let his blowes flie at randon, which put the youth in more daunger and aduised care to shunne them, assuring himielfe, that blow which tooke him full, would be his death: and therefore he behaued himielfe with such dexteritie, as his cousin had hee beene there, could haue done no more.

Oh it was a spectacle worthe the Greeke Theater, for the haughtie Athenian fiercer then when he slew the Tyzant Creon, procured to giue him but one blowe, the which with singuler agilitie the Greeke shunned. There is no Roe in swiftnesse like to him, for entring and retiring at his pleasure, sometimes hee wounded Theseus, and euerie time he tooke him ful with his famous sword, he made him tremble like the



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

the toppe of a high proude pyne, shaken with the voyce of heauen. Hec himselfe receiued some, but they were on his shield, the which in that dangerous battell saued his life. Sire honours they haue fought without rest. They were in the end (sweet Distresse) made of fleshy & blood, and must feele the excessive paine and trouble, so at once without any word, they withdrew to breath: for although the Greeke was not wounded, yet his much labour had ouer much wearied him. Against himselfe bitterly exclaimed the Athenian, seeing himselfe both matcht and wounded, by one knight without armor. The Greeke had no cause yet to complaine, for this was his first battell, yet he encouraged himselfe to end it to his glorie. As he walked vp and downe, he past by an oake, whereon he read an inscription to this effect.

Dismay not, o thou valiant Knight, that by thy valour haste arrived to vngratefull *Theseus* walke, but take courage, for vanquishing him, and winning his armor, thou dost arrive (this being thy first battell) vnto the highest top of honour, reseruing in thy power, the hopes of greatest ioyes.

Having read the letters, the Greeke thought nothing what hee had before him, considering the promise redounding by the victorie. No longer would he rest, for the desired end of the aduenture will not suffice him more to breath: and so couering himselfe with the remainder of his shield, and strongly grypping his sword in his hands, went against the Athenian, saying. Come knight, let vs end our battell, for it is a shame it should so long last, being but betweene two. *Theseus* replied, taking his axe twixt both his hands. There is not any, but at his first semblance would haue trembled like an Aspen leafe: yet the haughtie youth fearelesse, confronted him. His axe flourish, the Athenian thinking to haue hit him with the blade. But the gallant youth, whose strength excelled his, with his sword strooke it away: within him hee kept, letting flie a mightie thrust at his breast, whose force made him senselesse giue backe, drawing his battell axe after him. *Trebatios* sonne followed him hard, and ere he could raise it from the ground, hee layde on the visor of his helme such a blowe, that he thought the firmament had fallen, so many starres he sawe about his eares. So abashed to be so handled was *Ariadnes* reiecter, for even as hee dragd his axe,



### The third Booke of the third Part

hee hoped it aloft, that the Greeke could not escape the blowe, nor thin a wound vpon his right side, and yet but little, for feeling the blade, he yielded to the left side, and let it passe, and seeing his wisht occasion, presently closed with him. The Athenian durst not let go the are, for therein consisted his strength: whereby vnable to helpe himselfe as he would in this strife, surely Claramant wonne ground of him. A better wraasse could not almost be scene, for the Prince being vnarmed, and therefore numbler, trippes, tangles, and vntangles his legges with moze dexteritie: which his aduersarie could not do, although by mere strength he valiantly resisted. The Greeke offering to take the are from him, snatcht at it, but too strong so easily to part from it, was the Athenians holde.

Oh, who would not wish to see this braue contention, for ingrateful Theseus to defend it, fetches forces from his already fainting mind, and the Greeke to winne it, imployeth the utmost of his valour. Thus contending, they were almost at the end of the Alley, when Trebatios issue with a fine sight got the victorie. For seeming to let go the are, loosened a little his hold, and himselfe stepping something backe. The Athenian did the like, thinking so to reasssure his are: but the Greeke setting himselfe strongly on his legges, kept in, and on the suddaine wroong it out of his hands. No sooner had he done it, but all that abhorred freezing Alley, seemed on a light burning fire. The thundzings, lightnings, and hideous shoutes, not a little amazed the Prince, and him that was without, no lesse, who not able to indure, imagining the haughtie Donzell to be in some daunger, entred through those intangling pathes. By the Athenians losing of his are, the passage was free, so farre as the Donzell was. So he arrived when his invincible Uncle gazed on the armes Theseus had left him vpon a table of Iaspas, where there stood a Piller with an Epitaph. He then quieted himselfe, seeing it was the knight that had disenchanted him. They embraced with such loue, as if they knew the consanguinitie betweene them. Now may you (sir knight) said Claramant, seeing fortune hath giuen me armour and weapons, let me receiue the order of them at your hands. In all things I desire to satisfie your content, faire Donzell (replied the despairing Prince) wishing it no lesse then mine. But now rest a while, for we shall haue time ynough to doo it, for I beleue the winning of these armes, haue cost you no small trouble.

Some



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Some indeed it hath (said Clarament) but beeing so well acquitanced with the enioying of your sight, and these rich armes, I account it well bestowed. But let vs read this scrowle, for I feare we haue moze to do to get from this accursed place. So hand in hand they went to the pillar, and read the discription thus:

When the two most fiercest Lyons shall meete in the valley of vngatefull *Theseus*, the one winning his armor, and receiuing the order of knighthood of him that gaue him his liberty, and vanguarding the *Minotaur*, then shall the enchantments of ancient *Daedalus* haue end.

It greatly reioyced Claridiano, to see that he might safely giue him the order of Chivalrie. And with one accord hee armed and knighted him at once. They fitted him so well, as if of purpose they had bene forged for him. Neuer had Archifiloras Louer scene a gallanter knight: somewhat bigger he was then his cousin, but not taller: wherefore the wisemen alwaies doubted whether was the valianter, for their particular battels one against the other, it could neuer be scene. But rather on foote with the battel-are, no knight could abide the strength of Claramant. Fewe times carried he shield, the better to play with his are, and therefore was he surnamed the Cruel, for with it hee spilled moze blood then the fierce African. With exceeding ioy did he gyzt his sword, embracing him with exceeding signes of loue. They bowed such great amitie, that their knowledge of uncle and cousin, could not moze augment it. A while they rested, that with moze courage the new knight might pursue the aduerture of the *Minotaur*. So much desired the late armed Prince, to see the beaust, as he rose, saying. It is time (sir knight) to end this businesse, for being so sorely backt, were the enterprise moze difficult, the victorie is most certaine. His cousin followed him, glad to see his brave and gallant gate. His are he carried on his shoulder, the best weapon that the world contained, and his sword girt by his side. In this manner they parted towards a stately building that stood in middelt of the field. Parrow was the entrante to it, but within it had so many intricate waies, that they could not deuise where it might end. Enter into it would the vallerous Claramant, recommending himselfe vnto the immortall Gods protection.

The



## The third Booke of the third Part

He like did Claridiano, committing him to his keeping, that with a (fiat) framed the whole heauens, earth, and vast seas. With tender kindnesse the two kinsmen embraced each other, which done, the haughtie youth prepared to enter the inextricable house of Dedalus. What within hapned him, and the battell fought with the monster, deserues a new Chapter.

### CHAP. XIX.

How *Claramant* entred the laborinth of *Crete*, where he slewe the *Minotaur*, and the glorious end he gaue the aduenture.



Doubt not gallant Ladies, beauties ornaments) but that neither the excellencies of your perfecti-  
ons, whose powerfull vertue can onely with the  
sight commaund the greatest heart, nor yet the  
tender pittie attending on your sexe, will not with  
fimerous feare appall your gentle minds, reading  
these fierre accidents of sterne Mars. And then I  
hope you will not conceiue lesse pleasure with the  
bloodie battels wherein I am intangled, then at Cupids amozous dis-  
courses. But where they seem offensive, passe them ouer, though lone  
haue ordained them, and yet respecting the cause, I know you will not  
condemne the effect. For although now you see the Greeke Prince  
busied with cruell warres, too soone he will be ledde where he shall con-  
fesse, there is no good where the little blind God doth not raigne, and  
this euen when ayded with nothing but his strength, hee shall set free  
the faire Princeesse of the Scythians, from her strong inchantment.  
But befoze that happens, attend, and you shall heare what him befell  
entring the blinde Laborinth.

His are he carri'd afoze, and with vnremouing steppes, hee entred  
the way-confused habitation, where he so often turned and returned,  
comming backe when as he thought himselfe to go sozward, and cros-  
sing such by-waies at euery second pace, that when he iudged to be at  
the end, he found himselfe at the doze. Sometime he heard, not with-  
out great amazement, the noyse of voyces crying: The rich armor thou  
hast wonne bolde knight, shall not auaille thee to get from our dwell-  
ling,



## of the Myrroure of Knighthood.

ling, in recompence of thy presumption to disquiet vs: and then felt hee such mightie blowes, that often made him set his hands and knees vpon the ground: but considering how little he had done by winning the armor, and how the other valiant knight expected him, so animated him to indure those huge strokes, which none but he could haue suffered. Wearie and tired, he at last came where he sawe a little light, that issued frō a high cranny of the wal. It gladded him, for by it, he found a way that brought him vnto a faire large yard, about whose wals were many pictures and stozies so naturally dyabone, that they somewhat eased his paine.

By them he vnderstood Pasiphaes beastly accesse vnto the Bull. It so disliked him, that he turned away his eyes, being offended, not with the picture, but with what it represented. Hee sawe Theseus cladde in those armes he won of him, enter the Labyrinth, with the threed tied to his arme, and at the doore the two beautifull sisters, that with feare did stay for him. The cause was, they loued, and where that passion is, none can liue secure, fearing also the good it enioyeth. A little beyond, he sawe how ill repayed Ariadne was, being left to the mercie of the windes among wilde beasts. No such pittie was he moued towards the Ladie, that casting vp his eyes to heauen, he said. Oh cruell knight, vntoworthie the name of Theseus, imploying so ill those partes the heauens hath adozned thee with, but especially against a weake tender Ladie, whom if reason had been thy guide, thou shouldest haue helped, although thy life were hazarded. A new battell (wers it possible) would I haue with thee vppon this, to make thee confesse thy crueltie and ingratitude.

He vowed to himselfe to helpe all Ladies, though hee indaungered his life: which he performed so well, that many vnder that name, onely durst tranell alone, and euerie one called him the knight of the Ladies. His owne image sawe hee a little further, and his battell fought with Theseus, together with those which Claridiano made about his libertie. He reioyced to see the haughtie deeds of his new friend. Being about to go to the other side of the yard, to view those pictures there, as he turned, he espied two knights all in armor comming towarde him, with their shields and swords readie for the fight. Their gallant semblance and brauerie much pleased the Bræke: being neare him, one said.



### The third Booke of the third Part

Thou haste bene much overseene (knight) not acknowledging Lones so ieraigntie, to enter a place so prohibited, where be sure thou shalt be called to strickt accounts. They stayed for no answer, but ere he could sway his are about, they gaue him two mightie blowes, one on his shoulder, and the other on his helme. Both he greatly felt, especially so cowardly to be assaulted. With an Eagles swiftnes he got frō betwēen them, into the middelt of the broad yard, the better to vse his daungerous are. He stretcht it out at length, awaiting for his aduersaries, that nothing fearing, followed him. With the poynt he hit one, almost beheading him, for with the blade he sozely wounded his thzoate: hee drew backe his are, and winding it about, layed on his shield, the which he strooke to the ground, and his Maister headlong at his fete. His companion was not carelesse, but comming behind, gaue him so strong a blowe vppon his helme, that though he cut it not, yet hee bended it to his breast.

Like a furious Lyon turned the Creeke against him, whom hee found so neare, that to hit him, he was faine to draw back his armes, and with a fierce incounter he ranne his shield thzough, and wounded him on the breast, making him stagger backwards, and to helpe him downe, hee raised his are, and discharging it on the side of his helme, he cut away all that part, with a great peece of his inchaunted gorget. He felled him at his fete, and was so eager to end with him, that hee forgot his other aduersarie, who assaying him at his backe, gaue him so fierce a blowe vppon his middle, that his companion executing ano, ther in the same place, they had almost felled him. Neuer was Beare nor Tiger moze fierce then now the Prince became against his enemies, raising aloft his are. He could not misse his blowe, for they were before him. So with all his strength he hit one on the shoulders, the blowe was so mightie, that all the blade he hid within his breast, splitting his heart in two.

Scarce had he finished this, when he laide vppon his other enemy, who was so skilful, that ere the are descended, he got vnder his armes, running at his breast with a thzust. This blow much greued the Creeke, for it stopt the passage of his breath: and hee seemed to awaite the are: but for all the haste he made to ward the blowe, it first crowned him with death, for falling on his head, diuided in two, he sent him to accompany his friend.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

The hideous noyse which hee heard in the next roome, would let him take no rest, but rather leaning on his axe, he stayed more warily to see what it was. When presently with admiration he was amazed, seeing the feareful Minotaure so ugly and deformed. His face was like a mans, although farre bigger: his eyes glowed like a furnace of kindled fire. On his large front hee had two mightie hornes, whose poynts were harder then any Diamond: his necke thort and thicke. So big and broad a breast he had, that the very sight witnessed his strength. He was of a dunne colour, and went upright as wel on his hinder legs, as on all foure. In stead of clouen feete, hee had most sharpe claws, with which there was no armour but he would rent. In bignesse he was but as an ordinarie Bull, yet swifter then an Dunce, and so with his strength he assured his light incounters. With such fiercenesse hee came, that the Prince thought he should want time to view him. Nevertheless, he fired his foote strongly on the paved yard, until approaching to execute his blowe, hee gaue him way, letting him passe swifter then the winde.

There wanted no spectacles to ouer-view the battel, for the windows ouer the yarde were full of beauteous Ladies, among whom, (had he but his right iudgement) he might haue scene the tamer of his heart: neither did they want gallant knights to accompany them, for Dedalus had also prouided that, when he first made that inchantment in reuenge of Ariadnes wrong.

The speedie returne of the lustful Quenes sonnes returne, put him from his gazing: but hee found the Prince so watchful, that his hastie course was to no effect. Three carriers past they thus, neither wounding the other, yet so wel could not the Prince defend himselfe, but at last the Bul met with him. He strooke him not ful with both hornes, for so he had indaungered him, saue with one, hitting him on the shoulder, which forced him to shewe more signes to be a tumbler, then a skilfull knight. He was so abashed to be so vled, that fiercer then any Tiger hee stayed his returne: which hee did with his accustomed lightnesse. Him did the warlike Greeke expect with his axe on high, till he approached so neare, that to his thinking he could not lose his blow: with all his strength he turned it, giving the furious Minotaure such a blowe betwene his hornes, that he made him giue backe.



### The third Booke of the third Part

He thrust the blade so much forth, that the blow was but with the staffe, which sounded as if it had fallen on a plate of Steele. With his pawes the beast caught at the Prince, who with a leape escaped him, swaying about his dangerous weapon, discharged it on his fore knee, whose hard hyde could not save it from cutting cleane off. Never on the earth was heard more fearefull bellowing then the Bull made, wounded so dangerously. Somewhat carelesse stood the youth, thinking on the ven- furous blowe he had made, that he was forced to receive one nothing inferior to his: for the beast suddenly ran at him with both his hornes. To the fine temper of his breastplate, is Claramants life imputed: for had it bene otherwise, from side to side hee had pierced him: but finding a stay, so fiercely to resist him, he was strooke with a sore fall on the paved ground. There, having his other foote to helpe him with, he had surely slaine him. Nevertheless, with his right pawe (which was that was left) he tooke hold of his shoulder, and wrong him so hard, that the Prince thought that part, to be crushed to peeces. He drew it to himselfe, bring- ing away all it catcht in his enchanted clawes, which was his van- brace.

So strongly he boyled the Greeke, that he set him on his feete. Some feare conceived the haughtie youth, at the beastly creatures fiercenesse. He was not able to vse his are, before the Minotaure holding down his head, tooke him between his hornes, and flong him exceeding high into the emptie ayre: falling so miserably on the stones vpon his left arme, that he thought it and his body all brused. Here Galtenor dares not undertake certainly to expresse the rage that possessed the Greeke Prince. The hardest Dymond would he haue cleft: so fierce he turned vpon Pasiphaes sonne, that like lightning came against him, againe to boyll him on his hornes: but before he approached to execute his furious encounter, Trebatios sonne discharged such a blowe on one of his hornes, that it and part of his head came to the ground, and from the wound issued gutters of gore blood. Shill shoutes of hideous cries echoed thzoghout the edifice, answering the Bulles roaring. Who closed with the Greeke, casting his clawes vpon his sword hilts, the which he drew forth, laying such a blowe vpon his helme, that with hands and knees he kissed the earth. He feared not so much his combat against Theseus, being without armour, then now seeing his weapon in his enemies hand.

Increased



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Increased so was his feare, hearing a clamorous noyse that saide, Dead art thou distressed Prince, for neuer shalt thou see thy desired Parents, nor thy new friend that expects thee. It was no time to make reply to those words, nor seeke for them that spake them: for the diuelish beast fenst with the sword so brauely and quicke, that he constrained the Greeke to vse all his possible care to shun his blowes by his dexterity. And the Bulles bleeding, was to his no small auaille, for with his turning it fell on his eyes, that it much blinded his sight. So wel could not Alphabos brother saue himselfe, but he was ouertane with a mighty blowe, sidelong it lighted on his necke peece, cutting most part thereof: and had the stroke bene giuen aduisedly, his necke from his shoulders he had sundzed. The beast euer so closed with the Prince, that he could not fetch about with his are, that taking it by the toppe, he could no moze but strike him with the point, yet all y blade with the strength of his armes he hid within his brest, and thrust him away all the length of his are, that he could not hit him with his sword, being out of his reach.

There is no poysonous Basseliske to be compared with the wrathful man-halfe-Bull: who casting floods of blood from his eye and brest, prosecuted his disordered battle so cruelly, that the vered Greeke breathlesse, and tyred with ouermuch laboz, knewe not which way to turne himselfe. And for all he saue the Monster deadly wounded, yet he misdoubted the victorie, because he neuer reached him with the sharpe slicing sword, but it made him set his knees to the earth. All the yard was dyed with beastly bloodie goze, and such abundance thereof he had shed, that he seemed nothing so fierce as in the beginning. Well did Claramant perceiue it, which infused new hopes in his fainting minde. A thousand times called he himselfe coward, seeing that battle so long continued, which he iudged his friend would haue had long afoze ended, if he were in his place.

Most circumspectly, and with the greatest care he could, he awaited, and it was not in vaine towards the ending of the cruell fight: for the fierce beast returning with his full carreir, he strooke him on the head: in two he cleft it, and felde him dead at his fecte. He was no sooner downe, but all that edifice was conered ouer with thicke blacke fogge.

Whikes and howlings were heard, ugly illusions and fantasmes,



### The third Booke of the third Part

appeared to the Prince, that had he not bene Claramant, there he had soz ever left his life. The horroz which the Castle and all the Inchantment made in the vanishing, strooke him in a traunce on the ground, and was no lesse, then if heauen and earth should haue met with fierce encounters.

An houre and moze lasted the tempestuous noyse, in the end whereof, the skies cleared, and Claramant found himself neare to the Fountaine of the three Pipes, from whence Claridiano ranne to embrace him, and ioyfull to see him safe, said taking off his Helme. How do you feele your selfe (most valiant Knight?) soz I am sure, considering the outrageous cries I heard, you haue not bene idle. I haue undergone all things easily (sir Knight) replied his vncle, only by hoping of your sight, which hath lessened all my troubles if any be sustained. So sitting downe at the Fountaine, he related to him all his successes, whereat his cousin remained no lesse amazed then content, iudging y knight to be the sonne of ballour, of whome Claridiano intreated he might know who he was.

Where it soz nothing else (Sir Knight replied Claramant) but to satisfie your content, I should haue thought my selfe most happie, if Fortune would haue let me tell you who I am: But hauing so fauoured me with your deare sight and acquaintance, no maruel if this pleasure so fauour of some discontent, as in not being able to reueale my parentage to you, because indeed I knowe not who I am, moze then that I haue some yeares bene nourished in this Groue, being made exceeding much of, yet not knowing by whom, noz soz what cause, it is incredible.

Sometimes to comfort me in my solitarinesse, they told me I was of Greece, and of Noble parents. There is no ioy comparable to Claridianos, hearing he was a Greeke, perswading himselfe certainly he was his kinsman. Againe he embraced him, gratulating his being of that Countrey, and his Countrey man. Claramant requested also to know him, since the friendship bowled betwene them, might allow no secret from the other. To please him, Claridiano did it. The kissing of his hands intreated his faire vncle, saying. The not knowing you (so veraigne Prince) hath made me commit so manifest an erroz: wherefore in signe of inpenetrated pardon, graunt me your victorious hands, that I may thereon expiate the offering of my innocency on them, due to



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

to your worthinesse. His tender Cousin embraced him and said. Most valiant Knight, this is not tollerable, yours being of such deserts, meriting the dutie of all the world: And trust me, you are too blame to vse me with such ceremonies, that am your professed friend, and will be til the death. All that day they rested there, in pleasant conuersation passing away the time, where Palisandro reioyced in his very soule, that his Lord had found so mightie a friend.

So many things did the Prince discourse to him of Grecia, which so contented Claramant, that he intreated him to returne and accompany him thither: The which Archisiloras Louer graunted, purposing to discouer himselfe to none, arrined in Grecia, and so he praised his uncle.

In the afternoone, the two Heroicke warriors took their way towards the Sea. At their departure from the Fountaine, on the Pillar that contained the former words, they reade these.

The intricate Laborinth and vanquishment of *Theseus*, the most ingratefullest of all Louers, was ended by the mightie Kinght of the *Lyons*, in presence of his greatest friend and kinsman: by whom he first receiued his libertie. And so both ended the famousst aduenture in the world.

The suspitious words to be neare Allies, could not moze augment the Louers amitie betweene the two haughtie youtnes, although they increased new ioy, hoping in the end that Prophecie would issue true. Thus they arrined at the sea shore, where they founde their inchaunted Barke richly provided with all necessaries for the Greeke Princes. Who being shipt therein, with moze fury then doth a Comet crosse the azure skies, it launched into the deepe. Where of force we must leaue them, returning to Grece.

CHAP.



## The third Booke of the third Part

### CHAP. XX.

How *Lysarte* King of *Tharsis*, and his sonne *Florifarte*, Prince of *Argentaria*, arrived with their Fleete within sight of the *Marvellous Tower*, and what else happened.



Although I am constrained altogether unwillingly to leave treating of Love and Loves discourses, yet will I not leave to imploze your favours (belovous Ladies) to march under the displayed Ensigne of sterne and bloodie Mars. For if it be well considered, this is an amorous warre, proceeding of affection, wherein the cheefest and valiantest thereof, imparts no blowe upon their enemies, but is guided by Cupid. Some fight here to please their Ladies, others, to give her libertie inclosed in the Tower, whose love many prosecuted, but only by one is obtained. And others to become Lovers, choose this warre as their best meanes for it, which indeed sorted not in vaine, because many sacrificed their liberties to unknowne Ladies, especially in Greece, where the blinde God kept the greatest part of his treasure, wherewith he captivates the strongest hearts. So that (divine Ladies) while I follow Mars his Drumme, I doe not forget the footing of Cupids daunces. And this opinion is well confirmed by the gallant *Florifarte*, Prince of *Argentaria*, who neither Armes, nor the being among so many bloods, could extinguish the remembrance of his Love, not knowing who it was, save only to maintaine his word, ingaged to disguised *Artinio*, that for *Arbolindas* sake, the faire *Princesse* of *Scotland* had so laide that plot, heretofore recited: whose memorie and absence, made him within his Helme drowne his eyes in teares. It is common (excellent Ladies) among amorous Gallants, alwaies to bewaile their greatest evil, although many other present dangers doe incompasse them.

In this perplexitie the valiant youth in his fathers company, with all his Fleete navigated the Greeke sea with prosperous winde. With such great desire came the *Argentarians*, and men of *Tharsis* to fight, that they thought they should never see the occasion to shew their kings  
how



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

how greatly they desired to haue them. Ten dayes they sayled on the  
East seas, meeting with nothing that might hinder their boyage, bea-  
ring the Greeke armes in middelt of their Cullours. The eleventh day  
early in the moone, they discryed a mightie Proue of ships and Gallies,  
houering vp and downe, vpon the calme waters. They were aboute se-  
uen hundred sayles. So not knowing what they were, nor of whose  
part, they strook alarme, seeing the great aduantage they had ouer them,  
both in winde, and lightnesse of vessels. The Fleete of the Tharsian  
Prince, in good order began to cast about in manner of a halfe Moone,  
discharging two peeces of ordinance, in signe of battle, setting forwards  
against their aduersaries. Who as it seemed trusting to their strength  
of multitudes, made ready their well furnished ships, and answered the  
in like manner, aduancing on their Admirall, their royall armies: and  
thus they approached one an other, seeming to couer the seas. Foure of  
the Agentarian Gallies rowed forth without, spread sayles to discover  
their aduersaries ensignes, which to their content they discried: for be-  
ing in sight of them, they saw the imperiall Eagle, with two crowned  
heads, the selfesame they had. In signe of peace and message, the Thar-  
sians hung out a white flagge. So they were suffered to passe among  
their ships, whose numbers of men and fierce Gyants amazed them.  
They boarded the Admirall, from whence two ancient Knights of Ar-  
gentaria, were in a Barge, conducted to the royall Gallion, where they  
deliuered their embassage vnto a mightie knight, that little wanted of a  
Gyants heigth, telling him how in their fleete were the kings of Thar-  
sis, and Argentaria, from whom hauing scene their armies, they came  
to know whether they were on the part of Grecia, vnder whose stan-  
dard they also fought. These newes exceedingly gladded the gallant  
youth, being no lesse then valiant Abstrusio: who would needs expresse  
his thankfulness for what Rosabell had done for him, hauing through  
his valour and strength obtained his faire Syrinda: who knowing that  
her Abstrusio went to Grecia, would not stay without him, dreading  
the want of his presence. And so to conduct her with more safetie, hee  
had mustered together from both kingdomes and all the Ilands he had  
conquered by his valour, 300. thousand Combattants, the skilfullest in  
Pauigation in all the wide world besides, and he himselfe excelling all  
others therein, because with aduantage to giue a battell on the seas, hee  
learned to haue bene onely bozne thereto: hee brought with him 500.  
puiſſant



### The third Booke of the third Part

puissant giants his friends, & to please him with many of their knights,  
 accompanied him in that voyage. And in his ship to guard his deare la-  
 dy, were twentie, proportioned like to plesse pyres. Now seeing the Pa-  
 rrie, he had reputed to be against him, came on the other halfe of his hono-  
 red Prince, he declared who he was, and how he reioyced to haue met  
 such friends vnto the Grekes and Rosabell. Presently they sounded in  
 signe of peace, yet many of Abstrusio's followers, and Argentarians,  
 greened thereat, because they first desired to haue made tryall of they  
 persons: but long was it not after, that they had occasion to do it. By  
 this was it knowne to Lyfart, who his reputed enemy was, and so to  
 shew him extraordinary courtesie, he and his foune with foure Lordes  
 of estimation went to visit him, whereof Abstrusio being aduertised, ex-  
 pected their coming on the hatches of his Gallion, commanding as  
 they passed by, they should be welcommed with a generall peale of Or-  
 dinance from all his ships: which was performed in such good sort, that  
 the haughtie Lyfart much commended their good entertainment: who  
 with all his company went aboard of the Gallion: and most kindly  
 the two lustie warriors embraced one an other. And so being knowne  
 how they were all voyagers for one enterpryse, and eether relating how  
 much they were bound to Rosabell, the mightie Abstrusio burst forth  
 into these words. Oh Loue, now I am fully assured, how effectually  
 thou dost impart thy fauours to the Grekes: and I nothing wonder at  
 the lamentable desolation of ruined Troy, since all the good aduentures  
 of the world are soly reserved for the, as due to their worths. And your  
 Maiestie hath reason mightie king of Tharsis, to shewe the office of a  
 friend vnto so braue a Prince, and as for me, were I not he I am, should  
 I denie what I owe, since through him I enioy my life, possesse my  
 kingdome, and that which is more, and I most esteeme, is the happie  
 fruition of my deare wife. And then he told him all y<sup>e</sup> hapned with him,  
 to Rosabells immortall glory. So Lyfarte requited his discourse with  
 another of his Loues, and that therefore hee brought that Parrie to  
 ayde them. It is no more then due (said Abstrusio) to helpe him that  
 helpes so many to obtaine their ioyes, in whose pursute let vs spend  
 our liues, to make him happie in content. And so ioyning both flectes to-  
 gether by the Tharsians direction, they set forthwards, for Lyfarte was  
 best acquainted with those seas, and knew where the enchantment  
 stood, hauing bene at it when he freed Rosabell from it. Who desirous



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood. T

to honor the Pagan with more then ordinarie courtesie, commanded  
to be proclaimed throughout his Fleet, that every one should obey the  
mightie Abstruso, as their Captaine Generall. Who taking some of-  
fence thereat, said, Since our amitie must be of such force and continu-  
ance, I wold not (mightie Prince) you wold use these ceremonies with  
me, I do, but what I know you deserve and is your due. Brave Prince  
(replied Lyfarge) and therefore do but commaund, and we will all o-  
bey: for now and at all times, we entend to be your souldiers, and so hee  
intreated him to passe into his Galley, but not able to obtaine it, hee and  
his sonne were faine to stay in that Gallion. With the noise of many  
instruments, the two puissant Princes began to shape their course to-  
wards Nyquea. They had such faire weather and prosperous winde,  
that on the fourth day of their Navigation, they discried the flames of  
fire that issued from the Tower. Thither they turned their course, sen-  
ding forth fire swift sayling Gallies, to discover their way. The which  
were so neare the Tower, that they sawe a most dangerous battell  
fought betwene the Arches. The reason was, for that the mightie Bra-  
uorant making his abode there, would suffer none to pzeue the ascen-  
ding vp.

Some about it had lost their liues, and many their honors. They  
so long tarried, that from the South they discried befoze they went a-  
way, such an infinit number of sayles, that it amazed their iudgements,  
deeming them to be aboue 4000. vesselles of Ships, Barkes and Gal-  
lies. Neuer did Xerxes see at once so many sayles together. This fleet  
was the mightie Soldans of Nyquea, with whom all his friends bee-  
ing ioyned, came thitherward conering all the sea of Greece.

In the Admirall, was the two Soldanes of Nyquea and Egypt,  
being a brother of his whom Rosabell slew. Who seeing himselfe so  
mightie, resolved with all his strength to reuenge his brothers death,  
and his was the greatest part of that power. With them ioyned the  
Prince of Syconia, Venus Luer, the Sophy, the mightie King of Af-  
synia, with the Phenician; who hoping there to see their sonnes, as Lu-  
percio tolde them, agreed to ayde the Souldan of Nyquea.

Also very strongly came brave Epirabio, with proude Brufaldo-  
ro, Brave Onts great enemy. Many men brought not Bembo, Prince  
of Achaya, but without doubt, the valiantest and most expert in  
warre.

Enuious



### The third Booke of the third Part

Enuious Luperio so well pleaded for this brave knight, that he caused him to be created Lord Generall both by sea and land, hee accepted the honoz, iudging his strength to be sufficient to discharge a greater charge. He named for his Lieutenant and Substitute by sea, the discret king of Assyria, because he had rather fight by Land, that he might order and dispose of the Shippes and gallics, least their numbers breaking into disorder, might hazard their victorie, which otherwise they had assured.

Euery one highly esteemed him, seeing his gallant behaviour, and knowing how he was honoured throughout the world. So many hundred thousands of men they brought, that he thought he was able with them to subdue all the world: For most of the Princes were accompanied with furious Giants, and many Sagitaries: especially the Soldane of Egypt, because his country afforded most. With such noyse they arrived at the Tower, as if heaven and earth had met. Yet for all this, did not the two Combattants desist from the cruell fight, untill the strange knight saw how great a flete made thitherward, and then thinking it no wit, longer to stay, with a cruel point thrust & sturdie Brauorant from him, and turning his barke, put forth into the sea, leaving the enraged Pagan so furious, that hee was about to follow him. He was nothing daunted with the sight of so huge a Paine, but rather wished they would assault him, that hee might execute on them the wrath that the knight had put him in, who was none other, but the belwious Archysilora, who seeing the flames, came to the Tower. Within sight she stood, and so did the fire Gallies, to see what order they took. With soueraigne prayles did Luperio extoll the merits of the Knight of the Tower, so euery one called him. They all reioyced knowing whose sonne he was, and how he would take their part. He aduertised his friend Bembo, to honour him: for in him consisted the sure hopes of that doubtfull victorie.

The Prince did so, sending a Galley to salute him in his name. A little did not the Pagan esteeme the account that was made of him, & much honoured Bembo, being acquainted with him. By Luperio's counsell the three most mightie Pagans, Bembo, Brauorant, and Brufaldoro, his competitor, placed themselves before the Arches, for he cared what after did issue: and there (had it not beene in respect of Bembo) would Brauorant haue assaulted the Mauritanian.

There



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

There was neuer a Prince in all the Fleet, but went to know him, all whom he receiued with singular courtesie. But how he tended Floriza, requires a new storie: hers was the third voyce in counsel of war, for that dignitie had Luperchio procured her, by whose direction all the armie was gouerned. Neuerthelesse, greatly sorrowed the Soldane of Nyquea for his sonnes absence, thinking his presence would haue assured his hopes.

Scarce had that mightie Nauie cast about the Tower, when another no lesse puissant then it, appeared Eastward from the coast of Grecia, the which but stripping the windes, purposed to get the aduantage of his enemies. It was the Emperour Trebatios, that with five hundred shippes and galleyes made towards the highest part of the Tower: somewhat a farre off, and from the toppes of their masts they could descrie the Fleet at the Tower, which they iudged to be their enemies. Neuer did Neptune on the seas behold a thing more stupendious, for both armies seemed two populous Citties. In the royall Admiral, all the Princes were met to consult on the giuing of the batel.

The Emperour brought with him the best men in all his Empire, and in his guard his sonne Rosicler, the warlike Rosamond, with famous Brandafidel, and the stout Bramidoro king of Cerdena, for the Ladie perswading her selfe that in so renowned an enterprise, her beloued Dacian would surely be, would not stay in Grecia, but rather clad in her rich armour, was one that would most honour both on sea and land. With him also came the sonnes of the mightie Croanto, Lord of the Carmenian Isles, knights, whose like the world contained fewe. No lesse guarded was the Emperour Alphebos Admiral, within which there was besides himselfe, his deare Emperour Tefereo, and the two valiant Spanish brothers: for his more safetie, he had with him twelue Gyants his neighbours, then who in all the aduerse armie, there was none valianter, nor that with more trust and care defended their Prince. The Spanish Admirall was one of the bravest and best furnished shippe in eithers Fleet, for therein would Torismundo shewe his magnificence, with his brother in lawe Clauerindo, and both their sonnes that were in her, and at their guard fiftie Spanish knights, that against Mars, neither of them would refuse the combat.



## The third Booke of the third Part

The new King of Thessaly, would needs manifest how much he was bound unto the Greekes, to whom with his Sarmatia, the first onset was committed, and to be seconded by the Spanish and French, as most hardiest at the first assaults. The Emperour Trebatio like a wise Captaine, shewed himselfe in sanguine coloured armour (for this deuice pleased him best) and mounted the hatches of his ship, that euery one might see him. With him came the two wise men, Lyrgandeo & Astomidoro, who as yet knew not the end of the aduventure, for it was in Medea's bookes, and he that had them, was their friend Nabato, that in a Cloud hovered ouer the Tower (for his deare Don Elenos sake) lest Lupercio with his exercises might deuise some newe treason against the Lady enchanted there. The counsell was ended, with resolution straight to begin the battel, although there wanted the Kings of Antioch, Babylon and Persia, whose presence was greatly missed. Euery Prince and commaunder passed to his owne ship, to order thier necessarie affaires. And while the quiet waues with gentle calme bore their vessels, the great Emperour of Greece leaped into a Frigate, with his Helme off: on the one side went his sonne Rosicler, and on the other, Don Elenos faire Lady, and hauing gone round about his Party, encouraging his souldiers, set himselfe in mids of them all, and thus began.

Come is the time (most valiant knights) wherein deeds will be more requiset then words, hauing such multitudes of strong enemies to cope withall: & if I be moued to speake thus, beleue me, it is but to renew the memorie of the royall blood from whence we descend, & the glory of our predecessors from age to age haue maintained, eternizing their names therby, to all posterities: intreating you as friends, that none would fight otherwise, then to make their enemies confesse the worth of their persons, & not for desire of spoyle or gaine, and to expresse his duty, loue & fidelitie towards his God, Prince and country: for this, & nothing but this, will assure his victorie. And let not their ouermatching numbers daunt our couragious mindes, but still vphold our wonted valor, wherewith in despite of foes, we made our names to be feared. There can be no greater honoz, then with glory here like good knights to die, if fates haue so appointed. And since euery one of you knowes the right and iustice of our cause, let vs confidently trusting thereto, make them know how vniustly they haue topsy-turuey turned the world.

Here



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Here ended the braue Emperour, and with amiable Maieſtie, commaunded his frigate to his former place, leauing his ſouldiers ſo animated with his words, that they thought euery minute long, till they met with their enemies. Straight he ordered his battels, diuiding his Fleet into three parts. The middlemoſt he himſelfe conducted, being all the Greekes and Macedones, whole Generall was Meridian. The right Squadron guided the Emperour Alphebo, with all thoſe of his Empire, being very warlike people. The left going ſomewhat foremoſt, ledde Torismundo, Prince of Spaine. Beſore them all went Priams valiant heire, backed with ſome Spaniſh Gallies, to ſuccour thoſe in moſt danger. On the Pagans ſide, in no leſſe good order had Bembo diſpoſed his battel, in forme of a halfe Moone, an vſual cuſtome to fight among them: in which manner they approached our ſtate, at the ſound of many thouſand militarie Inſtruments. Being readie to giue the onſet, the famous Generall from his Admural, ſpake thus.

Where (valiant Knights) there is ſo many Princes, and ſuch great experience in warre, I ſhould haue little need to aduerſe you, that Fortune hath miniſtered vnto vs occaſion, for euer to perpetuate our fame. Sure may we account the victorie, for being as valiant as our aduerſaries, we exceed them in numbers, and may if we liſt, two or three at once aſſaile every one of his enemies. As for my ſelfe, loſing my life in the office you haue given me, I ſatiſſie the dutie of a knight, and vow to be your generall friend till death. And therevpon diſplayed a bloodie flagge croſſebarde with blacke, a ſigne that none ſhould take his foe priſoner, but that the doores againſt all mercie. So cloſing his beauer, lead after him the beſt ſoldiers in the Fleet, and leading vnder the arches the mightie Bramorant, and Bruſaldoro his competitor, thoſe two puilliant Fleets began to come within ſhot one of another. Where, oh Apollo, who may without thy helpe relate ſuch a famous conflict: whoſe ſucceſſe well deſerting a new Booke, it cannot haue leſſe then another Chapter.

CHAP.



## The third Booke of the third Part

### CHAP. XXI.

How the most cruell fight betweene both the Nauies began: and the admirable successes that in the processe thereof happened.



**H**is is the time, being encompassed with so many enemies, that I dare not (*saire diuine Ladie*) passe one fote further without your speciall sauor. Blacke and fatall was the day to many, tasting in it the sower cup of death. But to those whom fortune was bent to please, reseruing their lines to see the dismall bloodie losse of others, some comfort was it to them, the hearing of so many drummes and trumpets echo in the ayre, resounding in the deepe, reioycing at so many displayed flagges and bannerets as daunced with the winds, the waighing of anchors, and hoysting vp of sayles, the noyse which the poore slaves haue on the waters, beating them with their oares: the clamorous cries of euery Captaine, incouraging those whom feare had already daunted: the glistering shine of armour, and the confounding numbers of braue knights and fierce Gyants, that on the hatches of euerie vessell did expect their enemies: these and such like sights, amazed and admired the beholders. Neptune would not this day shew himselfe cruell, nor Eolus let forth more then one gentle bzeath, that did with swelling pride blowe big the Pagans sayles. Who taking advantage of the good occasion, with redoubled courage offered to grapple, accounting the conquest theirs.

Oh who is he, able to describe the manner of so many deaths that there were given: So great was the smoke issuing from their shottes, that they neither heard nor saue one another, which being past, and the welking clearing ouer head. Oh Mercury, would thou wert in middest of this battell, in apt eloquence to modell forth the merits of euery particular worth. But first the hideous cries of slaughtered bodies, the noyse of warriours, the shrieks of the wounded, could not but be a cruell spectacle: for they were all betweene two of the cruellst oppressed elements that were, fire and water.

Quickly



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

Quickly somed the seas with bloodie froth, and on it floated the dead carkasses of sometime living creatures. Exceeding great was the slaughter that the Christians made, with wilde fire and ballies of burning pitch and rozen. And as they vsed all possible celeritie in casting it, and the winde that played with their running wings a little strong, by that meanes was the destruction, which they made infinit: for neither striking of sayles, removing cabbins, and casting ouerboord all necessarie tackle, auayled to auoyde the mercilesse deuouring fire, which left neither mast nor sayle vnconsumed. Oh cruell Soldan of Nyquea, that doest delight to see the thing that would haue moued Nero to some pittie.

Strauge waies for deathes were there scene, for some flying the fire, perished in the waters: nor is there a friend, that will helpe the other. The father in such hurlebourly knowes not his deare sonne, nor he remembers his sire to pay him the debt he owes him, for life and nurture. Only every one procures to liue, and when he cannot scape, to die, not to depart vnreuenged. This satisfaction was the sole comfort to them, that with cruell wounds flung at their enemies, and stumbling on their owne guttes, embraced a willing death, together with their aduersaries. Some hanging by their strong hands ouerboord, salve the cruell axe descend, and cut them from his holde, and he reioyced with such a death, rather then to be heuen in peeces by an Infidel. Others embraced like good friends, sought their endes in the lowest deepes, glad to kill, being killed. The proper life is heere had but in equall estimation with his aduersaries death. Others that to themselves complained towards the heauens, against Fortune and their happes, salve their friends come stumbling without armes and legges vpon them.

Such was the confusion among them, that no order could be obserued, although therin the Grek got some aduantage, because their vessels were lighter and better provided. The gallant Spanish Captaine with aduise of his Lieftenant generall, Countie of Medyna, appointed some small boates well furnished, who with all necessarie diligence, closely pearced throughe tenne of the Pagans greatest ships, the which with such furie leaked, that on the suddaine, not knowing which way they were suncke, with an infinit number of men, chieflie Gyants, whose waights did soonest ouerwhelme them.



### The third Booke of the third Part

Then prevailed not outcries of Pilots, nor the hastie calling for boats, because the Rowers fearing the fires which the Spaniards hurled, rather strived to save themselves, then their friends, whom they save smothered in those unquenchable flames, and being up to the chin in water, yet seemed to burne alive. Peace, they iudged the two contrarie elements had made, seeing the abundance of water could not free them from the fire, nor the fire for feare of it, keepe the waters from overwelming them. From side to side some were thrust, and these exclaimed not for being wounded, but for want of company to comfort them, in their funerall obsequies. Well do the Greekes defend themselves, offending on this side, where the Spaniards brauely cried *S. Iames*.

And although they were confronted three to one, they gallantly stucke to it, seeing how victoriously the Thessalians had assailed their enemies. Wonders performed the Trojan with his beloued *Sarmatia*, against the *Pagan*: but what auuales it, when for one they kill, there came twentie in his place, and so on either side the battell was at one stay: whose fiercenes may be forgot, remembryng what on the right wing was done, where the fierce *Alphebo* which *Claridiana* commanded, for no deuile can there be distinguished, being all died in one sanguine hiew. There all other meanes they did forget of fight, save with their armes, that being come to handie blowes, who would not, but with more then admiration admire, seeing them board the Shippe, wherein the two Soldans of Egypt and *Nyquea* were, walled about with so many furious Gyants. On his right hand went his Emperesse *Claridiana*, like lightning among them. But the gallant *Teffere*, expressing there who hee was, shewed by good experience the high valour of his person. I beseech your Maiestie to follow me, for in despite of our foes, I will enter this ship (said he.) Do so, for we will all back you (replied the two Louers) that no lesse witht it then he. So the Ladie desirous to be first, couragiously leapt into the aduerse vessel, and maugre all the Gyants that defended it, she rusht in among them: but it had like to haue cost her life, for the Gyants iudging her to be of estimation, two of them gaue her two such blowes at once, that carelesse they stroke her at their feete.

Outright had they slaine her, or at least taken her prisoner, if her  
inuiucible



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

invincible husband with his utmost speed had not followed her close, almost falling downe, with such strength he leapt among them. Many blowes he suffered, making no reckning of them, because he onely aimed at them that strooke his Emperesse. It is no new matter what he now doth, dividing the two Gyants at two blowes in foure parts, that had offended him, offending his Ladie.

He durst not go from her till she recovered her selfe, becoming fiercer then a mountaine Lyonesse. Many liues dearly bought her wrath. Brauely were they backt by Tefereo, and the two Spaniards following them, together with most of the Imperiall guard, and the foure Gyants, all which kept still together in a round, backe to backe.

There was so many in the Soldans shippe to keepe them at worke, that they had no time to looke about: for the Barkes and Galleyes of supplie, which Bembo as a skillfull Generall had appoynted for their purpose, serued to no other end but to fetch away wounded men, leauing fresh souldiers for them, and of the best. Heere were one of the fiercest conflicts that happened all that day: for the Tribizonians imitating the valour of their Princes, would not haue them lose what they had wonne.

And therefore although thousands perished, they brauely hindered their aduersaries from succour, which was no helpe for the Lords within. In her inchaunted Barke, had the braue Queene of Lyra ranged about all the battell, to finde out her friend Rosamonde, whom shee greatly affected: but not meeting with her, her good fortune, or theirs that were in the shippe, conducted her thither.

Seeing that cruell sight, and thinking them to bee the Emperour Trebatios his Sonnes, shee brauely leapt into the Egyptian Barke, crying: Grecia and Lyra. Many knew her by the voyce, among whom were the Emperours that were opposed against a number of Gyants.

More destruction make not the vnseasonable showers of drowning waters, beating downe the ripened corne: nor with more furie flies not the hastie fired powder, then the warlike Marrone with her sword, shewes her selfe toyning with the Greeke, Mars wounding



### The third Booke of the third Part

the first Gyant she met so brauely on the helme, that cleauing it, shee also cleft his head downe to the necke. With such helpe (soueraigne Queene said Alpheo) our victorie will not bee so great, if this shippe should of it selfe yeld, although the greatest personages of all the flecte be in it.

It was no time to bee spent in answering courtesies, for the Gyants bee many and strong, and die willingly in defence of their shippe, that by this was at the last to be conquered: for with the Queens helpe, and the Trebezonians diligence, the two Soldans were constrained, rather then to fall in the hands of such fierce warriors, to leape into a Pinnace, in whose succors many others came, among which, was the Galeon wherein he came from Nyquea, into which they went, grieuing for the losse of the other, which was one of the best in all the flect. Whereof neuer a man suruide, but every one perished by the sword, and they that fled that death, leaping into the sea, swallowed it in water of eternall sleepe.

This victorie was not so clearely wonne, but they lost tenne gallies of Trebizound, which the Pagans suncke, who also kept them company with some of theirs. Leauing the conquered vessel well manned, and displaying on the toppe thereof the armes of Greece, victoriously they returned into their owne, and with all speed the Emperour commaunded the Pilot to hale towards the Tower, where there was most to do, for the two braue Competitors being there, would suffer none to come thither without losse of life.

Woe haue no reason thus long to forget the mightie Bembo, Lord generall of the Pagan armie, who espying the Greake Admirall, supposing that most of her Princes were in her, made with his against it. The noyse of the vehement shooke was such, that it seemed no lesse then the incounter of two huge rockes. The Greakes got the best, by reason she boze her beake higher, wherewith she bozsed all that side. Here do they fight as if they were on maine land, for Galley to Galley, and ship to shippe, beeing grappled together, the arme must onely procure the victorie.

Oh Bembo, who would not wish to see the busted in the things thou didst neuer exercise? For firmly fixing thy feete on the ships side, & with thy sword twist both hands, executed blowes & Mars wold haue thought impossible,



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

impossible, but as in the other, there were such knights, his deeds did nothing amaze them, neither Don Celindos, nor his brave sisters, who were confronted with the haughtie Emperour Trebatio, his sonne Rosider with the bewteous Rosamonde, that with victorious courage did behaue her selfe; giuing no stroke but it selde an enemy into the deepe, that seeing they must die, had rather doe it by her hands, deuoured or consumed, either in the water, or with fire. She eagerly pursued Don Celindo, and followed him more then she should: for the Achayan seeing her so neare him, discharged a flourish on the best helme in both parties. It made the blood gush through her mouth, and bende her head as lowe as her faire breast. Shee conceived such mortall hate against him for this blowe, that first the generall Greeke warres ended, befoze it was extinguished.

Nevertheless he scaped not vnpaide, for trusting to her Armes, (although Floraliza gaue her a fierce thrust,) she lost not her intended blowe, which she executed on the Pagans shield: which is no defence against it, for the blade is the best on all the earth: and therefore cleane in two it parted his shield, in whose making, Lupercio had sholwne such skil. It daunted the Sarazen Prince, for hee had neuer seene his Armo: cut. Yet there staid not the furious sword, for lighting vpon one side of his Helme, cutting, it descended downe to the shoulder, where it lost his force, making him stagger backe. And then she would haue leapt into her aduersaries shippe, had not then come against her, the Gyants of his guard, that made her violently retire. Idle were not Father and Sonne, behauing themselves there like Sampson, among the Philistines.

And on the other side, the two friends, Bramidoro of Cerdania, and the strong Brandafidel, with his flying vnaccustomed weapon, who sometimes, with it, at one blow selde thre of those deformed Gyant. On the other side, was this ship likewise boarded, by the valiant Prince of Assiria, so fiercely, that had not the good Theban Duke bene neare to her, shee had bene entered: but his comming, with the Duke of Medynas, intercepted their aduersaries from their purpose. Ashamed was Bembo to be so repulled, not knowing his aduersary. Some paide dearly for his anger, for returning to his place, he met with Oliuias Louer, something carelesse of him, being carefully busied against the Gyants.



### The third Booke of the third Part

With a downright blowe he strooke him. The Pagans armes were not of such weaknesse, as that his blowes should be receiued without warde, for it forced him to set his handes on the hatches of his shippes, and before he rose or were succoured, the Achayan seconded another, nothing inferiour to the former. There is no Hyrcanian Wyger that may be compared vnto the great Emperour, seeing his sonne so vled. He clasped his sword strongly twixt his hands, laying the waight thereof vpon his helme. Neuer til then, did the Sarazen feele such a blowe, for his sword flue out of his handes, and he set both knees on the hatches. At his rising, a pellet of Brandifidels weapon, did hit him on the breast, and depriving him of breath, made him recoyle backe. Well did the two brothers knowe him, but they could not deny their dutie vnto their Generall: and therefore together they requited the Gyant with such blowes, that stumbling backwards, he had like to haue fallen: and had they bene able to reach his head, they had felde him: for felwe armes were like to theirs.

With such eager fury did Rosamond seeke Bembo, that shee did not respect the others strokes, whom Brandafidell wel befriended with his terrible Dace: for with it, he strooke asloe the two brothers, that brauely defended their partie: so that the wrathfull Ladie past along, and with both hands gaue the Sarazen Louer a mightie blowe. All the toppe of his helme with a great peece thereof, she strooke away, and wounding him a little, she made him tremble like an Aspen leafe. Ere the Pagan could turne himselfe, putting forth her arme, she gaue him a dangerous thrust on the breast. His Armoz and priuie coate it pearst: and Lyrgandeo saith, his flesh felt the blade. But howsoeuer hee gaue backe yeelding from the sword, a manifest token that hee feared the poynt. So well could not Bramidoro, and Brandafidels blowes defend her, but Floraliza founde opportunitie to giue her one with Camillas sword about her helme, with all her strength. Shee greatly felt this stroke, for it made her turne amazedly about.

With another full as great, seconded Celindo, with Quene Iulias cutting blade: it fell on her shield, whose inchantment being far auncienter then that of his sword, it could not cut it, but it strooke it so violently against her head, that shee was verie much astonished.

Forward kept Bramidoro King of Cerdena, to pay what Rosamond



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Samond did owe (for the furious Bembo not seeing him, and meeting with a Gyant in his place) with both handes he gaue him so terrible a blowe, that he constrained him to set both knees on the ground. So busied were father and sonne against the Achayan, and another, that he had time to bestowe another at his helme, it was with such mightinesse, and discharged (as he could not moze desire) that he seld he him all along vppon the hatches, to the astonishment of euery one that sawe the Battle, to enioy whole sight, many left their fights, for of foure to foure, a fiercer Combat could not lightly be wished. Readie to burst with rage was Rosicler now, seeing the Achayan was onely he that disturbed the entrance of that vessell. He closed with him, and with both hands they either discharged vppon the other, such puissant blowes, whose eccho was heard ouer all the flecte, the which, both Parties hozroz could not drowne.

With much courtesie they receiued one another, bowing their heades verie lowe. So intraged was the Pagan seeing his shielde in peeces, and his head wounded, that it made him second an other befoze Rosicler was readie. It was like one of those he vsed to execute, making him touch the hatches with hands and knees. He could not adde any moze, but raising his sword, with it he reached Brandafidell (surprizing him vnawares) vppon his armes: It was a miracle he did not cut them off, yet it inforced him to let go his Pace, dragging it along, not able to wyld his armes through paine.

This did Trebatio well note, ending then the dispatching of a Gyant to hell. At one steppe he confronted Bembo, whom befoze he could settle himselfe, the Greeke gaue so strong a blowe, that maugre his might, he strooke him away from him: and saide to his friendes, that their pursuing particular Combats, made them lose the generall battell, their enemies so much exceeding them in numbers.

It was as the Emperour said, for indeed they had the worst, having euerie vessell of their owne assaulted by thre and foure of their aduersaries, and yet the courage and vallour of the Christians was such, that it supplied the want of men. All had not bene sufficient, had not at this time, some five houres befoze the setting of the Sunne, Eastward appeared at one instant, two proude flectes, that with a freshe gale made towarde the Battle, not seeming any whit to assault eache other.

And



## The third Booke of the third Part

And from the coast of Niquea, was also descried a number of barks with souldiers. Both Paulies feared, not knowing to which they would incline, for that side was sure of victorie, whose part they took. At once they both approached, yet in different manner: for that which coasted more along the land, came altogether in one squadron, discharging their ordinance. The other kept with the winde on the seas, and in forme of an Arch, with their greatest vessels in the midst, lingring nothing behinde. Whose arriuing, and what they were, deserues a new Chapter.

### CHAP. XXII.

How in the Greekes ayde there arriued the mightie *Abstrusio*, and the King of *Tharsis*. With *Sacridoro*, King of *Antioch*, *Polidolpho*, and the Persian Prince.



Here is no content that might bee equalled to mine (sayest of all sayes) if I durst but imagine you had with some pleasure ouerpast the beginning of this Paulall conflict: the which fauour were soly sufficient to adde thereto such an ende, as every woorthy accident therein hapned did deserue. For that flecte which coasted more along the shore, entered among the Pagans side, that for all they were so many, were not able to forbid it, nor to breake their order.

This was the famous Abstrusios Paulie (then who upon the seas was neuer any more skillfuller) and bringing with him, so many men & well furnished vessels, with an infinit number of braue knights, advancing aloft the Greeke armes, hee passed through his enemies with winde-blowne sayles, and oares, in most horrible manner: crying Grecia, and his countrey. He kept such good order, that ere he lost it, he made mortall destruction on his enemies, for his smaller barks entring, where greater could not, did nought but cast wilde fire, melted pitch, and scalding leade, which was present death to those that onely defended themselves with the sword. Armed like Parthians, were Abstrusios followers with bowes and arrowes, wherewith before they fell to handy blowes, they bereft a number numberlesse, of liues.

Which



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Which horroz of shafts being past, it was admirable to see with what brauerie they betooke themselves to their weapons. They were all expert and exercised in warre, because they liued in it continually, against theyr neighbouring Ilanders. Wherefore the Sea began a newe to floate with dead trunckes of men, with such horrible outcries of the wounded, because they could not befoze death reuenge themselves, that there is no heart so stony and remozelesse, but would haue bene moued to pittie.

Sylla that wished to see riuers of purple goare, had here bene satisfied with sight of seas of blood. The mightie generall Abstrusio did set himselfe vpon the hatches of his galeon, doing what Mars durst not imagine: on either hand, Lysart did accompany him, with his sonne Florisart, desiring to make manifest their affection to the Greeke. The Gyants that were appointed to garde the sayre Serynda, were cyled like tall high mastes, clad all in Steele, with Iron Haces in their hands. A better defended vessell was not in all that flecte: for not dreading any thing, it went forwarde sinking all it met. The furious Bembo hauing seene the mercilesse destruction of his men and Gallies, had commaunded his to be vngrapled from the Greeke Emperors, to send succour where it most needed. He was straight espied by Abstrusio, that presently sent those that followed him to haue her, leauing way for his encounter. The beake of whole Gallieon was all of Iron, fastened euen downe to her keele, which made him presume on more then was lawfull on the seas. So seeing how well his Gallies had assailed his aduersaries, not omitting his intent, Abstrusio entered with his, running with such force against the side of his aduersaries, that he split her cleane in two, and had almost endangered himselfe: for trusting to his strength, he would haue leaped into her when she began to sinke, and they within her, cryed out for boates to saue themselves. Oh Bembo, here diddest thou shew thy selfe to be whom thou art: for leaping into a small Barge, he opposed himselfe against Abstrusio, as if he were in as good a Gallieon as his. The Pagan laughed at his folly, and noting him more narrowly, by his colours he knew him to be his enemies Generall.

It gladded him, thinking to haue taken him prisoner. But the haughtie Louer that had his life reserved to endure greater troubles, made his valour there knowne to the uttermost, and how in deeds of



### The third Booke of the third Part

armes he would be second unto none : for though he was beset on all parts, he so bestirred himselfe , that neither his aduerse Generall, nor Lysarte, with his sonnes power , could enforce him from his standing. Presently was he succoured and taken into Lindauros Admirall, dyed in blood and so enraged , that he would speake to none , nor any durst looke on him. To be in such vnaccustomed brunts amazed him , and moze, not able to learne, nor gesse whom his aduersary was, that making such destruction of his, had succoured the Greekes. From this imagination was he put, hearing the entry of the other flecte nothing inferiour to the first.

Diuers were the voyces heard, for some cryed, Babylon and Persia, some Antioche, others Croatia, and all at once, Grecia, and then let sie such volleyes of shaftes, that no lesse haucke they made, then Abstrusio. Whose arriuall utterly vanquished that wing of the Pagans : And Sacridoros Admirall where Oristoldo was, past close by the Tower, which none else had done. It astonished both ffather and Sonne, to looke vpon the two Competitors, Bramarant and Brusaldoro, who with their ponderous blades suffered none to approach the Arches : to doe the like arriued Bernbo, making himselfe strong betweene the Pillers that sustained the Tower, where he animated himselfe with gazing on the Ladie he most affected, that opening the Casements, then knowing none of them, had set her selfe to behold the battell.

She appeared like the Sunne of Maye, in all his glorie, chasing away the darkie Clouds from about him, that would obscure his brightnesse. There was none in all the flectes but turned their eyes to gaze on her beutie. Many knew her, whereof one was Oristoldo, who thus said to his ffather. This is the season wherein we must procure to liberate you Ladies thence. For the sayest of them is Lyriana, whose carrying from Nyquea, cost our friend Rosabel and me so much blood, and moze labor. And beleue me not (dread Lord and ffather) if these knights haue not purposely take their standings there, that none might proue the ascending to the Tower.

As they were thus talking, they descried two knights of rare disposition, comming in several Barks. The one was presently knowne to be Don Eleno of Dacia, whome (being departed from Pollidolpho) Nabaco had guided thither. Of his helpe there was no need : for the

Pagans



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Paganis had then the waist: yet he entred as he was accustomed, con-  
uering the frothy waues with dead carkasses. He assaulted no particu-  
lar knights, but the fierce Gyants. Quickly was Rosamond aduer-  
tised of his comming: whereat she straight commaunded her Royall  
Galley to waite her, where he was, she met him. Her Armour was well  
knowne of euery one, and so her beloued Dacian also knew her. He  
leapt into her Galley, embracing one another with intyre loue. It was  
no time for long discourses, so hauing kiss the Emperors handes, the  
two Louers began to performe such deeds as were incredible, but not  
to those that to their cost beheld them.

The other knight clad all in Rose colour Armour, none as then  
knew: but approaching neare the Tower, and viewing his Lady, he  
conceiued such content, that he suspended his sight, til he had well no-  
ted the possessor of his heart. He became so fierce with that sole sight, as  
he iudged nothing, the subduing of both Armies. Casting his shield be-  
hind him, and taking Hector's sword twixt both hands, at fewe blowes  
he was known to be Rosabel, to the exceeding content of all his friends.  
In this inchaunted Boate, he flung to the Arches of the Tower, but he  
found them so wel defended, that neither his friend Aristoldos helpe,  
nor his owne strength, could make his way to them: For the three fa-  
mous warriors being in a rancke, with such bzanery behaued them-  
selues, that euery one iudged the approaching to the Pillers impossible.  
With Brauorant closed Lyrianas Louer, crossing his sword on high:  
nimble he was then Scythian, and so with all his strength befoze he  
could warde it, he discharged a furious blow on his helmet, the which  
had it not bene of such force, even with his head it had bene cleft, yet he  
forst him two steppes backe. Into his Barke he would haue leapt:  
but the Pagan (inured to such blowes, although it much greued him)  
returned, and with a thrust droue him backe againe, as fast as he came  
forward.

Fewe blowes like vnto these had the Britaine felt, but seeing the  
Ladies looked on him, and also his Father, and Graundfyer, that were  
come thither, returned vnto his place, where he began one of the fear-  
test Combats of all that day. For against the other Barke wherein  
Bembo was, came Don Eleno, no lesse furious then Mars: and Bru-  
faldoro was confronted by the Emperoz Alphebo. He y first executed  
his blow, was halsty Dacian: so close grapled were y barks, y they could



### The third Booke of the third Part

fight as sure as on land, and therefore Rosamonds beloued, with Brutus sword, flourished it twise aloft. Well perceiued Bembo his intent, wherefore leauing his Helme bare, gaue him a strong thrust on his amorous bzeast: the which taking him as he stiffe stood, and with his minde another where, it was a great chaunce he ouerthrew him not, but made him stagger into his Marke. After him would the Pagan leape, but as swift as a Leopard returned the Louer, and ere he could doe it, with both hands he discharged his sword, in such manner on his helme, that he thought he sawe moze starres then the heauens contained: and boze so heauily on the one side, as he set his left knee vppon the ground. Another seconded the Dacian a little lower, descending downe the shoulder: a better blowe was not giuen in all the Battle, for it cut away all his Warbrace, with his sleeue of Male, and somewhat wounded him. The Pagan trembled at the blowe, and knowing that was he which ouerthrew him in Grecia, he animated himselfe, for he was greatly vexed to see his crosse fortune, and beganne to shewe, he was no lesse then Bembo, Prince of Achaya. The Emperour Alphabo that knewe his enemy, warily assayled him, although he quickly broke off order, for the Moore remembryng him, will not vse trickes of defence, but giue and receiue without pitie. So at once they laid on their helmes. Both kist the ground: the Emperour with one hand, but the Mauritanian with both, and both knees. The Greeke seconded another, bearing his sword outwards: which offer he had scarce made, when turning his hand, with all his strength he thrust at his bzeast: thence the poynt glaunced to indaunger the Moore, moze: for if he had not yelded to the thrust, cleane through he had bin thrust, for happening thort the buckles, it ranne to the other side. None salued the blowe, but iudged either the Moore to be dead, or deadly wounded.

Who hauing escaped that great daunger, became moze furious then fire smothered within a Basseliske, charged with powder: And recouering his former place, casting his Shield at his backe, beganne so with blowes to weary the Lorde of Trebizond that almost hee could not fetch his bzeath: yet not in such sort, but he often astonished the Moore, and made him to feele his strength and fury of his armes.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

All this while was not Trebatios pephew yde, with Brauorant, the flower of Paganisme, for their fight is worthe the sight of the towred Ladies. It was more dangerous for the More, because the Louer supposed his Ladie had knowne him. He neuer shewed himselfe more skilfuller nor fiercer. Many particular battels were left, onely to beholde that of the fire. Both are well armed and sure from beeing wounded, which made them fearelesse abide one anothers strokes. Like a chased Boze fomed the Scythian, seeing so many aduersaries to resist him, and more they that could hazard his battel, as he that then was before him, who refusing no labor, entred and retired at his pleasure. Nimble and active was the Pagan, and so helping himselfe therewith, before the Brittaine youth could turne about, he executed a blowe vpon the rich helme which Eufronisa gaue him, whose fine temper saued his life, for else it had diuided him in two: yet it made him set his hands to the ground: ere hee rose, the Pagan discharged againe a flourish on him, nothing inferiour to the other. It was somewhat besides his head, and not able to make impression, it glanced away without more harm, although it had done ynough to irage him. With more furie issues not the Wyger from his denne to seeke his pray, then he returned vpon the Scythian with Hectors sword, strongly clasped in both hands. A boue foure lost the vermillion of their faces, seeing the feareful blow descend, whose noyse was heard ouer all the armies: his helme sounded like a bell, and he voyded much blood thzough his mouth and nostrils: and staggerd bp and downe, not knowing where he was. With such another hee helped him, which forced him in amazement, to set his hands and knees on the hatches of his barke, wherein he would haue leapt, if the two brothers, Don Celindo and Floraliza, had not there arrived.

At once they both eagerly discharged two blowes on him, that hee was constrained to bow lower then he would. Quicke and bolde was the Ladie, so would she haue wonne the entrance of his breast, but shee had like to ouerthrowne her selfe: for the Emperors Admirall beeing neare thereto, and the haughtie Rosicler knowing his braue sonne, and seeing him so ill bled, like an Eagle leapt into his boate, saying. Courage braue Prince, for your father is with you. With the blowe he gaue, she was forced backe, and for feare of falling into the sea, shee withheld her selfe.



### The third Booke of the third Part

His son could not answer him, so enraged he was, imagining some shew of cowardise had made his father come to succor him. And his blood repaired to his heart, the which burning like fire, and closing barke to barke, leaving his father with Don Celindo, he turned his reuenge wholly vpon the Ladie, whose beautie deserued no such requitall.

Camillas armie may she thanke for her life, else this had bene her last battell and terme of breathing. Three steppes he made her stagger backward, and followed her with so strong a thrust, that hee thrust her so farre within the barke, that easily he wonne the entrance in despite of the Pagans. Exceeding danger both Meridians daughter incurre, fighting with Rosabell, with whom no Lyon may bee compared. Againe before the Ladie recovered her selfe, hee gaue her another that had almost felled her. Neuer was she in such perill: but he that loued her as his soule, Don Clarissell, (that long had sought her) came thither in such good time, as it was worth no lesse then her life to her: who seeing his Ladie so handled, let flie a cruell thrust at him. Against him that had strooke him, turned the Brittain youth, giuing the Ladie leaue to rise and breathe.

Thither also arriued the furious forsaken Lindauero, with many mightie Gyants of his guard, and seeing the cruell fight, and knowing the Ladie (whom they all tendered) hee went against Rosicler, that hand to hand warred with Celindo: he entred betweene them, parting both Barkes, whereby the brother and sister turned both vpon Rosabell. He did not refuse them, although the Assyrian troubled him euerie time he reached him. On euerie side else of the battell, the Greekes had plainly got the victorie, which they brauely maintained. And indeed the mightie Abstrasio was he that wonne it, winning the title of an excellent Captaine, which he kept for euer. There wanted not them that tolde him newes of his deare friend Rosabels arriual. It gladded his very soule, for as it he loued him. Him for gratitude both Galleonor extoll aboue all the Princes in the world. Hee tolde it to his beloued Syrinda, saying. Let vs go to ayde our Prince (deare Ladie) for he that is so much indebted to him as we both, it is the least we can do. His strength and valour do I wish I had (replied she) to imploy in the thing I most desire. With an embrace the Pagan encouraged himselfe, and commaunding his Galleon to be directed towardes the  
Tower,



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood. T

Tower, in a trice he rusht in among the Barks there. Easily he might haue suncke them, with the aduantage of his being the strongest & best in all the Fleetes, but yet he would not, saue enter them with his person. By his manner of fight he knew his friend, whereupon he committed his Galleon to the stout Lysarte, that shewed himselfe that day to be a good warriour.

The Greeke Louer wanted now no friends, for on the other side came the haughtie Oristoldo, all couered with Pagans blood. Abstrusio first arrived, whom euery one feared, seeing him so sterne and mightie: from his owne to Rosabels shippe he leapt, pronouncing his proper name. It much contented him to haue such a friend by his side. Little could Alicandros Nephewes winne at their hands: for the Pagan merits not comparison with lesse then with Brauorant, and if hee haue any aduantage ouer him, it is more then is knowne. In his assault he strooke Don Celindo on the helme: had he done it with aduise, it had beene the last, with the latest moment of his life: neuertheless being besides his head, it falleth him headlong downe. He clasped him swift his armes, thinking eyther to kill or impzison him. Either hee mought haue done, if the gallant Don Argante had not lept thither from his vessel.

Of haughtie courage was the youth, so vpon the Paganis barke he discharged a fierce blowe, which made him leaue Don Celindo, and tarne vpon him. Against them both would the Pagan defend himself, to his honour, had he place to wilde about his strong armes: but there was such little room, as they were all heaped together one vpon another. Yet Rosabell brauely keeping his standing, I knowe not with whom I may compare him, vnlesse it be with him whom Fortune exalted aboue all knights: who, while matters thus past to eternize the Grekes fame, appeared in sight of both armies, like the God of warre himselfe, whose arriuall deserueth farre more then another Chapter.

CHAP.



## The third Booke of the third Part

### CHAP. XXIII.

How to the battell arriued the two Princes, *Claramant* and *Clariana*: and what ende happened to the aduenture of the Tower.

**T**ired with bloodie conflicts of sterne warre, I now will returne me (faire Ladies) to Loves sweet pleasing battels, whither bringing those two that haue the sole preheminence ouer al others in armes, and onely to liberate the beauteous *Lyriana*, I shall not need to craue your fauors thereto, for I trust (though not all) some wil denie it me. This hope animates me to proceed in this labyrinth, and commit the two princes to your protecting smiles. Plowing vp the billowes of the calme seas, they resembled the glorious sunne, appearing through the cloudes, displaying his fire rays. As they approached, *Claramant* said.

The world (braue Prince) is so full of your haughtie deeds, that there needs no more triall to eternize them: wherefore let me intreate you at this time, to let me be foremost in this attempt, that presuming on your helpe, I may winne some honour by your ayde. Most warlike warriour (replied he) considering the necessitie, you should not demand of me, what I ought to intreat of you: for where you are betwix his passage, there my sword is not required. So doo as you will, for I meane to keepe where I am, to enioy the sight of your deeds. And as I thinke, there is more to do at the Tower then any where else. He needed not to haue said so, for *Galtenor* that guided their barke, directed it thither.

Straight did *Trebatios* unknowne sonne close his beauer, and setting one fote on the edge of his bessel, with his axe twixt both hands, he entred betwene both armies, crying: *Grecia, Grecia*, that none might strike him. There was none but much reioyced, seeing one with *Theseus* axe at one end, and the other, with the best sword in the world, defending his backe at the other. More furious did not *Hercules* shewe himselfe among the *Cennaures*, nor *Theseus* beating at the brazen gates of Hell, then were the two Princes among those miserable Infidels.



## Of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

No blow doth the new Mars bestowe, but ridde his father of an enemy: who was overjoyed with pleasure, seeing the excellent disposition of them both. He expressed it to the two Gyants that were with him, saying. Have you ever scene any knights of haughtier disposition: credit me, these be they will winne our victorie. I thinke no lesse (said the King of Cerdina) for excepting my Lord the Emperour of Trebizond, I haue not beheld any of better constitution and shape of bodie then the foremost. It is so (said Brandafidell) but Ile be suretie for the other, that he will not for his part lose any iot of the victorie. Why then (spake the Emperour Trebario) let vs behold the triall of their brauerie. Quicly did they verifie it to bee true, for passing by the imperiall Admirall, and thinking the Emperour to be there, they did their dutie very gallantly.

Swifter then the winde past their Barke forward, till it came euen where Rosabell was: round beset with mightie enemies was the lustie Brittaine, for Epirabio a valiant Pagan, with others, exceedingly troubled him. So was Abstrasio by the rest that were in the shippe, as is already said. Now Claramant arrived, and with a flourish swaying about his axe, hee strooke the Pagan on the helme: it is too weake to defence the head, for with a big wound he was felled. To succor him came the braue Assyrian Prince, who heere got nothing now, for the rigorous axe will not pardon Loue it selfe: the which was discharged on the midst of his shield: It cleft it in two, and had not his armor borne Telimonios, his bze all had been so too: yet hee stumbled backwards, not knowing what he did. When turned he vpon the two valiant brothers, reaching Floraliza besides her helme: and although her beautie did not deserue it, he made her stumble as shee would fall. At her did Rosabell let dize, felling her altogether on the ground. To helpe her hastened Don Argante, which was to no small effect, hitting Claramant a venturous blow on his armes, making him lose his, whose force could not but haue indaungered Don Celindor. Like an angrie Lyon did the gallant Torisiano set vpon Lyrianas sister, and giuing him on his helme a most fierce blow. It forced him touch the Barke with one hand.

By this was Floraliza on his fete, who more furious then an Hyrcanian beast, with both hands raised Camillas sword, laying it on Rosabell before he rose. With a little more, she had layde him along: yet



### The third Booke of the third Part

she stayed to giue him a thrust at his rising, which she did with the utmost of her strength, dazing him two steppes from her. Disgraced was the Brittain here, for either tripping one leg with another, or by the strength of the blowe, he fell on his backe at Don Celindos fete. Who thinking he had occasion by the front, would not omit it, for seeing him so stagger, he turned his sword about ouer his head, and discharged it at full on the Greekes helme. Doubt do the wise men, to whether Rosabels fall may be attributed. It extreemly grieved Abstruso that was hard by him, then who was neuer Lyon more fierce.

He met with Floraliza, that eagerly followed the Greeke, on whose shield he layde the waight of his armes with his broad sword, in such manner, that beating it against her head, it left her sencelesse. He had time to turne vpon Don Celindo, that would haue kneeled on the Brittain, whom he gaue so mightie a stroke on his shoulders, that he inforced him backwards faster then he came. Then gaue hee the Pagan his hand, who quickly got on his legges, and so at his pleasure took his reuenge on the brothers, that they were fully requited with interest.

In this season was not Claridiano so ydle, as to witnesse what his vncle performed, for neuer any knight did better backe his friend. There was no Gyants durst come neare the enchanted barke, but in satisfaction of his presumption, left his life in the handes of the one or other. Sometimes would Claramant hitting his enemy with his arc, strike him euen to Claridians standing, who finished the reckoning, bereauing him of his life, whose fortune brought him thither. The horroz which was made there, seemed no lesse then if the whole frame of heauen would fall: for all the famous Pagans repaired to the Towler, maintaining the battell in an equall state where they were: but in all other places else, there was nothing heard but victorie for the Greekes. Breaking through so many valiant aduersaries rusht the enchanted Barke, till it confronted Brufaldors. It much pleased Claramant to beholde the Pagans disposition, and with what furie hee defended his arch. With thousands of dead bodies hee had strewed the vast sea, hauing thitherto with honoz augmented his fame: but the blinde Goddess intending altogether to fauor the Grecians, conducted thither the invincible Claramant, all died with Sarazens blood.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood:

The Horse then ended the felling of the gallant Persian on his Barke, to peeze Laiffas extreame grief that beheld it: who quickly saw him pay for it dearly. For as the Barke past all the Christian vessels, made the warriour way, somewhat he might reuenge them for their sustained disgraces, and others (that waighed not their honours) because they would not meddle with him. Many left their fights, hearing that the knight of the Lyons combatted with him that kept the arches of the Tower. With fresh courage entred the famous combattants. Most nimble was the Horse, and knowing his enemies valor, with what advantage he had with his axe, he purposed to proceed warily in this battle, and helpe himselfe with that dexteritie the heauens had lent him. So with his shield on his arme, and his sword poynting outwarde, stayed for him.

The venturous youth did not respect nor care to ward his aduersaries blowes, saue onely bzandished his axe about, letting it fall where it would, but Brasaldoro was no knight to bee assaulted so openly and carelesly, for letting the axe flie ouer his head, he set his knees on the ground, and in that manner he gaue the Prince so mightie a blowe on his left side. Had not his armor bene so sure, in two hee had beene divided, yet it made him stagger as if hee would haue fallen on that side. This was the first and greatest blowe that Claramant receined. With more aduise he turned, and being well settled, whilded aloft his axe. All his trickes nor agilitie auayled the great Mauritanian king, for falling on the edge of his shield, all it reached was cut away, letting the cruel blow light on the Pagans temples. Neither armor nor enchantment can resist the furious axe, for in sight of the greatest Princes and best knights of the world, the mightie K. of Mauritania with a dangerous wound was felled all along vppon the hatches of his barke. Highly was the knight of the Lyons extolde by all the beholders, for they that knew Brasaldoro, and at one blowe saw him on the ground, could not imagine whom his aduersarie might be. With mightie furie did the barke passe forward as far as Bembo, at such time as the proud Horse rose in amaze, & flinging to his enemy, in his place he encountered the haughtie Claridiano, representing the sterne God of battelles on the seas. Betwixt them both they began one of the fiercest combats of that day: for the Pagan rozes and blasphemies against heauen, when thinking to be reuenged, he met who he imagined not, being so braue to his cost resisted by Claridiano, that many times he was stroke fencelesse.



### The third Booke of the third Part

Harry gazed on their fight, iudging him and his companions of the Lyons, the flower of both armies. Quickly did the furious Claramant, attract all the spectators eyes after him, who then had like to haue incurred much danger, for bearing his ayne on Brauorant, the valiant Bembo stept vnder his armes, and in his passage gaue him a dangerous thrust. Where stayed the Barke, and ere the Greeke could turne about his are, Achayan was ioyned to Claramant. The Pagan greatly fearing the Greekes weapons, went as neare him as he could, and so reached at his sword. With some amaze hee made him giue backe, else he had easily drawne it. Claridiano did by chance perceiue it, whereat with one step he was with him. Neuer did two knights better ayde one another, then the kinsmen. At his armes he let flie a mightie blowe, it made him forget his hold of the sword, and retire three pesses, helped thereto with an enuious thrust. And hauing performed his succor, he returned very quicke vnto his first place. For the Assyrian and Don Argante were come thither, to both whom hee made knowne the valor of his person. More abashed then may be expressed. Claramant retired a little backe (seeing what had happened him with Bembo) to fetch about his are, which he did with such furie, that it caused chil colde feare in the hearts of the furthest remoued, but not in the valiant Achayan, that nothing at all daunted, entred within him as he raised his weapon, and with his utmost strength he strooke him on his thighes.

A more troublesome blowe had not the Greeke receiued, for the paine thereof made him lose his. Wherevpon he would haue closed with him: but the mightie Bembo striking his are outwardes with his sword, and before hee could defend himselfe, hee discharged it on his helme. He made him set one knee on the ground, and see the least stars in the firmament at broad day. Ere he could rise, he strooke him againe on the shoulders with no lesse fiercenesse. But all this cannot auayle him, to shurne what the cruel Distresse of inconstant times had decreede against him.

For the Greeke being well recovered, and strongly getting on his feete, with extreamest furie of enraged wrath, with his remorselesse are, he met the Achayans head. It cut away all the toppe, and a great peece on the side, and had killed him outright, striking something lower: yet in a trance he felled him downe.



## of the Mirroure of Knighthood.

And so brauely passed forth vnto the third Arche, defended by the flower of Chivalrie. There was neither friend nor foe but admired the knight of the Lyons fortitude. So well was he backed by his Cousen, that his prayes with his Uncles merits, were sung in an equal key. For there was no knight so hardie that durst but imagine to interrupt their passage, seeing their maintenace. Within reach one of an other, approached the two warriors. Either by the sole view esteemed his aduersary. Brandishing his heauie blade, the Gran Campeons Repheo, prepared himselfe for his defence, with such aspect, that I know not he, would not feare him.

New manner of fight would Claramant haue deuised against him, considering his wel knit sinewes, and strong composed members. There he repented that little pause, iudging it cowardise to make that small stay. With his axe on his shouldeer and his left foote forward, he went against his enemy, that with his sword in both hands expected him in the same manner. A more fearefull spectacle was neuer scene: for most of the spectators dreading their sight closed their eyes. So Claramant made as if he would execute his blowe, but in the midst of his course he stayed his weapon, to take him vnawares, as he fetched it about againe. Carelesse was not the Scythian, but rather none like him, did with more warinesse lay holde of aduantage in the procelle of his battels. And so perceiuing his aduersaries intent, he closed with him so quickly, that when he would haue strooke him, the Pagan had executed his blowe.

There is no knight how valiant soeuer, that hauing receiued such a one, durst haue expected an other: for this forced the Prince backwards within his barke, and dragged his axe after him. A thousand times would the Pagan haue leaped after him, which he left, because he would not forsake his Arch. A brauer blowe in all that warre was not giuen, nor neuer did Claramant receiue a bigger, for it made the blood gush from his nose and nostrils. So farre had the Pagan run within him, that he could not strike him with his axe, but rather Bramarants fierce sonne seconded it most mightily. Neuer did Trebatios haughtie sonne do, what at this instant, which was by stepping aside, to shun his aduersaries stroke. And as he wished it, so hee saue the Route Pagan follow the furious waight of his blade. Whereat the Crake settled himselfe on his left foote, and crushing one tooth with an other, with the vt-



### The third Booke of the third Part

most of his strength, he discharged his rage on his Helme. From it rebounded the Are, else it had battered all his head: neuerthelesse the blowe so astonisht him, that not knowing what he did, he staggard as he would fall.

Whereupon Claramant brauely leapt after him into his Barke: the like did Claridiano, and either supposing the other would not strike him, they both at once executed two most puissant blowes. Altogither without feeling, they felled him. Little honour got the kinsmen by the deed, for being two, and of such note, it was rather the Pagans glozie to be vanquished at their hands. Scarce was the blowe discharged, when the Tower was all couered with a blacke thicke myst, and with the same, with such horroz was a larum sounded, as in the beginning of the conflict. With thundring and lightnings, strikes and hideous fearful cries, and terrible claimours, were both Armies affrighted: the cause was, that Lupercio seeing how his hopes were by Fortune cross, procured to obtaine by his Arte, what with so many thousand men he could not get.

But Nabato the Greeke friend, that had more skil then he, with Pygromanticke spellles and Coniurations, dissolued the others exorcismes, and so cleared the Tower as before. From whose highest top was a Ladder let downe, by which two knights might well get vp at once. Slow to doe it was not the valiant Greeke, casting his are vpon his shoulder, at such time as the strong Pagan rose from the ground. There is no Lyon missing his pzaie, more fiercer then he, for roaring like a bayted Bull seeing him with the are ascend, he would haue followed him: but Claridiano preuented it, confronting him, arme against arme, and sword against sword, and with a braue thrust inforced him backe.

Well did Branorant expresse his wrath by discharging his blade with both hands on the others rich helme, the finesse of whose temper, saued his life: yet it did not keepe him from touching the ground with his knees, boyding blood from his bysso. Whither rowed amaine in their Barkes, came with enraged fury, the two lustie warriours, Bembo, and Brusaldoro, by whose comming, Claridiano had incurred much danger, if they had entered: but the gallant Rosabel, that with Don Celindo and Floraliza combatted, hauing approached so very neare to Branorants barke, he leapt into it, when Bembo artiued to



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

do so. The Brytaine hindred him from it, driving him away with a  
braue thrust, not onely making him lose his intent, but hopes of ever  
getting his desires: For the magnanimous Dacian rushing a-  
mong them, interrupted Brufaldoro from ayding the Scythian. And so  
one with others beginning a fierce battell, the second Mars Claramant  
had time to ascend by the ladder, not without much paine, for vnsene of  
him by whom he was strooke, he felt himselfe mortally wounded. Unto  
the top of the Tower he arriued, with more courage then Hector a-  
middest the Myrmidons, where he was opposed by two deformed Gi-  
ants with heauie Haces. But as Fortune had volued to fauour him,  
like lightning he put himselfe among them, with the best weapon the  
worlde contained. In middest of the Gallery he stretched him at length,  
which being broade inough, oh who were able distinctly to dylate the  
wonders he performed, swaying about his are: for the Gyants onely  
are there to fight, from whence they draw strength for their defence,  
and courage from their wounds: the which maketh our knight take  
the condition of a Lyon, assailing and retyring, like an Eagle in swift-  
nesse: but the more hee toyles, the more doth it augment force in his ad-  
uersaries, for their inchanment lies in tumbling downe the way Clara-  
mant ascended. Long endured not this strife: for the Prince seeming to  
feare them, gaue a litle backe, wherat they eagerly folloved him, which  
he well noting, set on him that came foremost, and meeting him right a-  
gainst the ladder, he turned about his are, with such fury, that with it he  
feld the Giant ouer, who was neuer more seene. The Greeke was of  
pregnant and sharp vnderstanding, so he straight perceiuing the cause,  
which made him auoiding a blow of the surruier, close with him, & sud-  
denly hoysting him aloft, tumbled him the same way his companion  
went. If all the frame of heauen and earth had fell, it could not haue  
caused more feare, then what surpysed the hearts of euery one by the  
Gyants death. So wearie remained Claramant, that to ease himselfe,  
he raised his Beauer, to breathe a while, and so he looked out at a win-  
dow on the battell, reioycing to see so many of his enemies vessels to  
burne with fire. Long stood he not so, because the wise Nabato in com-  
pany of the Ladyes, issued out of an other sayre Gallery. The Greeke  
had not till then (since his enchantment) seene any woman, which made  
him admire these sayres, iudging none might equall the cheefest of  
them.



### The third Booke of the third Part

So the wise man approached, saying. Most excellent knight, you may account your selfe in more then I may well expresse, hauing ended such an aduventure as this, onely reserved for the valour of your person, and vertue of those armes, the which untill this instant, haue cost you most deare: yet must you more indure, sustaining many dangers about them: and therefore henceforth begin to take courage. And as for what you haue done for these Ladies, because in part it concernes your selfe, they shall not need to thanke you. And more in this matter I am not permitted to say till you shall lose your libertie, recovering then both father, mother, friends and wife. And while I live, will I assist you to my power, for my Lyons sake that is among you, whom I account as my soane.

So for this time ceasing, I commit vnto your victorious hands, Lyriana the faire princeesse of Nyquea, espoused vnto the valiant Greeke Prince Rosabell, that belowe expected her, brauely backing you with your deare friend. Hauing thus said, he vanished, & Claramant taking the Lady by the hand, fairer then the sun, he ledde her downe the steps, at the noise of such sweete musicke, that it much delighted both fleets. Thither repaired most of the valiantest Pagans, imagining the aduventure ended. Oh Bembo, it touches thee more then any, & so more then humane deeds dost thou perform, yet all auaille not against thy contrarious fates: for the Greeke Emperour seeing the aduentures end, commanded certaine Gyants to rowe him there, with more furie to breake through his enemies: with whom went most of the warlike knights: He that best deserved in that exigent, discharging the hopes of him expected, was the braue Tartarian Zoylo, being high treasurer of all the fleet, who desirous to shew how much he was indebted to Rosabell, chose out eight of the best furnished Gallies, both of sayle and munition, and with them in a rancke, he set himselfe along the Arches, that way to hinder his aduersaries approach, although all their fleet made thitherwards: and so ioyning with Oristoldo, and his valiant father in his ship, with Abstrusios barke, which was the strongest on all the sea, they brauely resisted the Pagans furie, that then seemed rauenous. Nothing helped them, for then Claramant descended with his Beauer closed, because he would not be knowne by any. With a loude voice he demanded for Rosabell.

Farre from him was not the glad youth, most ioyfull seeing his  
Lady



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Lady sure from his enemies. She was deliuered to him with these words.

I doe so much desire your content (most valiant Prince,) that to procure it, I haue indeuoured to doe thus much: and so in signe that I will euer be your friend while life indures, I present you with the spoiles, onely due to your valour. Whereto the Prince replied. Brave knight, I doe not so much esteeme the good you haue done me by liberating my espouse, although my life depended thereon, as the generositie and magnanimitie wherewith you doe it, which is so great, that I cannot requite, saue by perpetually acknowledging the debt you haue bound vs all in, and referre the satisfaction to your owne merits, from whence this memorizable act procéeds. The great hurleburly brake off their farther speeches, whereat he returned, for the other Ladies and Rosabel with his in his armes, was conducted to the Christians Imperiall Admirall, where the Greeke Emperour receiued them with the greatest ioy in the worlde. Presently was victorie proclaimed for the Greekes: who being assured thereof, fought fiercer then at first.

The sunne with his absence parted that more then wondrous Battle: and so the Pagans fearing their vtter ouerthrow, sounded retrait, leauing the third part of their bestelles swallowed by the sea, with infinit number of Knights and Gyants. They entred into counsell to see what befitted them. Voyces were giuen altogether to ende the battle: but in the end they resolued the contrary, because their aduersaries held Fortune by the hand, and thereupon withdrew towards Nyquea, from whence with fresh supplies and new hostes, to turne vpon Grecia they resolued. Some comfort was this to those that were like to burst with fury.

Bembo would not be cured, til the Souldan himselte intreated him. So madde was Brauorant, that none durst looke him on the face. The wise man, consoled and animated them, saying he did finde by his Art, that if there doe not come more supplies to Grecia, they should surely conquere it: for their partie would be far augmented, by the bringing of many more Princes much wronged by the Greekes. With this they were appeased, although destitute of consolation. Nothing so were the Greekes, that all the night spent in ioy and pleasure, not missing their lost men, though they were very many.

The Emperour with all his sons, wold needs passe into Abstrusios



### The third Booke of the third Part

great and strong Galleon, to doe him that fauour. Who requested the kissing of his handes, but the Emperoz would not, and embracing him, said.

If I had knowne we had bene all souldiers vnto so braue a Capitaine, I had with better hopes expected the happie successe of this conflict. What I did, in what degree soeuer, (most mightie Monarche he replied) was through imagination of the great content I hoped would haue redowned by my seruice, the which I assure eternally vnto your Crowne. All the warlike Ladies assembled together, where Archyflora made her selfe knowne. The Emperour tooke her in his armes saying. In faith, beleue me faire Queene, our victorie hath bene too small, since procured by such hands. Rosamonde reioyced in her hart with her comming, for they intierly loued. Then the Emperoz sent for Venus, and Layssa, who brought with them their two litle daughters, whose beuotie euery one admyzed. There also the graund Trebatio greatly thanked Pollidolpho for his good aide. And euery one in generall, were busied in the entertainment of so woorthie a successe.

Through all the flecte, the Emperour commaunded the two knights to be sought for, that had ended the aduenture: but not finding them, he was aduertised how they departed in the greatest haste possible. After them had the Emperoz sent, but that Nabato staid him, that would not depart without visiting his Dacian, and speake to the Emperoz, who entertained him as his deeds and merites deserved.

He made reply according to his wisdom, perswading them not to grieue for the two knights absence, whom they should see in other new contents, which the one should conceiue vntil death, although the other, is so tormented with amorous cares, that the earth can afford him no pleasure, because the giuer thereof is in this shippe. None could directly suspect who he was, yet some iudged him to be Claridiano, and they were the two gallant Ladies, Rosamond and Archyflora, who was comforted with hope to see him in Grecia, where she would assure him of his glorie, and how that if she were beloued, he was no lesse. It was presently knowne by spies, how their enemies were withdrawinge homewards. It nothing grieued them, in that for Lyrianas sake, they willingly would haue accorded to any good motion.

Before



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Before that Nabato departed, he aduertised them, they should not dissolve they: Hostes, for that they would returne vpon Crecia, with the greatest powers on the earth, against which the fierce Lyonesse would rise, stirred vp by the Russet Lyon. With this he tooke his leaue of the Greekes, leauing them much bound vnto him. A great while he conferred with Don Eleno, to whome he declared the cause of the future warre, and that since he was the greatest cause thereof, he should procure to make knowne the utmost of his vallo: because that partie which should most respect him, would most oppresse him, and would many times put him in imminent dangers of his life, yet all should honorably ende, to his lasting fame, and Rosamonds. So he embraced him, vanishing far from thence.

The next morning, the victorious Greekes in tryumphant manner made towards Constantinople, hauing finished the famouslest nauall fight that was heard or read of. Forwards did King Sacridoro put forth, to be the first should beare those happy tydings vnto the Emperesse, which he accordingly performed. And with prosperous windes, not long after they arriued all at Constantinople, in whose welcome, there happened what the next Chapter shall declare.

### CHAP. XXIII.

How the Emperour *Trebatio* with all his Fleete, arriued at Constantinople. His welcome, with what else happened.



Sooner were the furious horses of the Sun, harnest in they: bright Caparisons of shining light, readie to drawe the golden Charriot of heauens glittering eye, through the Chyystal pauered wayes of the Azure skies, expelling thence the duskie Cloudes of leaden melancholy darkenesse, when the Greekes gallant Flöete containing so many Princes, and braue Knights, appeared in sight of the famous Citie of Constantinople, sounding so many military Instruments, as if that were the instant of the earths generall desolation.



### The third Booke of the third Part

Such thicke smoake of smothering fiery mysts, raised the discharged ordinance in wel ordred peales, that one vessel could not discern the other. Which past, the Gallies and Shippes beganne to showe themselves, daring the windes with their proude streamers, and all their toppes with dauncing Banners made of silke, whose meeting displayed in the aire, raiused the beholding sences with ioy: which on the other side, was a cozine to the hearts of the afflicted prisoners, seeing theirs as trophies of the victorie, set vp among their aduersaries. The eccho on the water of mellodious harmony of concordant Musicke, was a comfort to the poore wounded souldiers, who were all committed to the warlike Troians charge.

The discret Citizens were not all this while carelesse, but rather in preparations to feast their Prince had bene most carefull. All the Castles in the Citie welcommed them according to their vsuall custome, placing on the highest of euery one, the Emperours Imperiall Standards.

To the sea side came all the gallant youtnes bzauely Armed, and euery one a blew scarfe, and in their hands swords and daggers, wherewith they skirmined as they went. In two parts they diuided themselves to take the Princes in the middle, that then were comming forth of Abstrusios Admirall. A most faire Bridge they set vp, from the Galleon to the shore, with many stately Arches, all couered with green cloth of golde, and they with many curious Pictures, containing all the Greeke Princes Battles and aduentures. Who issued forth in this manner.

First marched the Emperour Trebatio, betwene his two sonnes, representing such Maiestie and chearfull semblance, that therewith his subiects were much gladded. A little behinde them, appeared those three Myrrors of beawtie, Lyriana, Archysilora, and Rosamond, who to please the Princesse of Nyquea, had put off their strong armements of warre.

They were all three attyred in greene, cut vpon cloth of siluer, and lackete with knottes of Pearle, and betwene euery cut, a button of rich Dyamonds: on whose sparkeling light, the reuerberating sun dazeling thereon, depriued the beholders of the Ladies sight. Large & wide were their garments, with long sleeves hanging to the ground, all richly Embzodered, euen much like the fashion now vsed in France.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Other hozter they woare on their arms, laced ouer with great Orient Pearles, with cuts drawne thzough with finest cloath of Golde, faced with white and crimson, according to the blance of the Parthians. Their disheueld hayze dangled downe in framels, whereon, there is not any, but would haue hung thereon a thousand soules, and iudge them too selwe for their merits. To conclude, they were so exceeding absolute in all perfections, that Apollo blushed to bee excelled in betwix by humane creatures, who to enioy the contemplation of their excellencies, and surfet in imaginary conceits of their rarieties, curbed with his raignes, the hastie galloping of his fierce and vnstayed steeds. A little after them, followed other thze, no lesse bewtifull then they. These wer the gallant Venus, the braue Layssa, with the faire Syrinda. They would not change colour, and therefore were all in Crimson, cut vpon Golde.

Next to them, the excellent Empresse, Claridiana, attired according to her Maiesticke state and grauitie: yet with such exquisit bewty, that the former sire became enuious of her faire. She passed on with the mightie Abstrusio, whom all the Greekes much affected. The rest of the ladies were al richly apparelled. At the end of the bzidge, vpon a triumphant arch, stood thze images, most liuely representing the first thze ladies. Not far from them, thze Syrens, with Amber tresses dangling to the ground came forth, and playing on seuerall Harpes, sung seuerall notes one after the other, thus.

From the Lillies is she hight,  
Robed with Emperious might:  
Yet she staynes the Lillies white.

When she had done, then the second turning to the Quene of Lyræ,  
sang.

Earthly thing giues not her name,  
Earth cannot expresse the same:  
Heauenly tis, and thence it came.

The third, with no lesse sweetnesse, remembred Rosamond, in this manner,



### The third Booke of the third Part

Though last, not least, but with the best,  
The worldes sweete Rose is well exprest:  
A faire paire-royall euer blest.

Having all ended, they recorded them together, with such recording  
voyces, to the consort of their delightfull musick, nothing different from  
Angels harmony. And as they went vnder it, from the opening of a  
Cloude, spredde vnder the Arch, after a tempest of artificall thunder  
and lightening, there rained downe, an odoriferous shewer of sweete  
water-dewd fragrant flowers, whose comfortable odour, reuiued all  
their sea-weakened mindes.

Before they had passed it, from the thickest of the same Cloude,  
there descended three mightie Eagles, eyther with a coronet of flowers  
in their billes: and whipping the ayre with their great winges: they  
with them, crowned the three most gallant Ladies. So soone as  
they were gone by, and Venus with her company come thither,  
the three Syrens, to a new dulced tune, with one voyce sung this  
note.

An other faire payre-royall of like fame,  
That doubtfull tis, which hand will winne the game.

The twelue Gouvernoys of the Empire, with all the courtiers and  
gallants of the Cittie, expected their landing at the shore: where  
twelue auncient Peeres, clad in long robes of cloath of Golde tray-  
ling on the ground, tooke the sixe Ladies vnder a cannabie, whose value  
exceeded estimation, and in that equipage marched forward, till they  
stayed to behold a Castle, erected and drawne on foure wheeles: with  
in they rung a larum bell, crying, Nyquea, Nyquea: aduancing on the  
highest of the same, three Ensignes, with the Ladies armes.

Then in rich Armour issued out thereof, three well accompli-  
shed Knights, who aloude made a challenge, to maintaine they  
were the Paragons for bewtie and fortitude. There wanted not ene-  
mies to defend the contrarie: for from the same Castle came  
forth nine knights, betwene whom, they began a brave combat at  
barriers.

Then



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Then beganne the Castle to moue, discharging so many fireworkes, as if it were al on a flame. The Ladies wold not mount on horseback, because they were very neare the chiefe gate of the Cittie, thzough which the Theban Duke issued forth with the imperial Ensigne: who intreated the Ladies in the Cittizens behalfe, to dispose of the Citie as their natural Lords. They returned their thakfulness according to their fates, highly esteeming of their solemne entertainment, which had so exceedingly contented Lyriana, that shee accounted all her forepassed troubles well bestowed, since they had brought her to so happie ende. In all the Court there was not any but came to see the arrivall of their Princes. In opinion was the Ladies beautie had, whether of the three was fairest: for Lyrianas sight had attracted all eyes. And in no lesse admiration were the others had.

Such presse of people were in the strates, that had not the Emperours guard gone before, they had not bene able to passe. But beeing entred into the yard, new matters did happen, for an alarum bell was with furie rang in Lyndabrides enchantment: which ended, they heard a most heavenly noyse of sweet musick. Ther was none but demanded the cause of that vnaccustomed accident. Whereto the wisemen answered. That by reason of the Nyquean Princesse comming, the gates were opened, that euerie one that would, might freely procure the aduenture. Very great pleasure conceiued the Emperour Trebauio thereat: so did the grand Alphebo, imagining the end of the aduenture was at hand, so much by them desired.

I do omit (faire Ladies) to shunne prolixitie, their newe welcomes in the Hall: onely remembzring Oliuas joy, with the sight of Lyriana and her sonne Rosabell, whom also with the other Ladies, sonnes, and kinsme, the Emperesse Briana, most kindly entertained. Few daies after, was the Brittain Prince, with the Princesse of Nyquea, married by the Patriach of Constantinople, being first baptized, which sacred and diuine Sacrament, Rosamond would also receiue, for her dear Lords sake.

New triumphs had been ordained, but that the proue of the disastrous Tower did intercept them: for as the promised reward was so great, euery one procured most, to shew himselfe most forward in that aduenture.

Dinner



### The third Booke of the third Pare

Dinner being done, there wanted no knights that offered the trial, but as it required such great valour, ere the sunne setting, there was hung about the Tower, aboue two hundred Shildes, every one placed according to his Maisters desires. Drowne would Apollo his cleare light, in Theris watery lappe, when through the place there entered a gallant and well accomplished knight, clad in rose colour Armour, and brauely mounted. His disposition pleased every one. Who galloping along, leaped from his saddle, and with admirable brauery passed into the Tower. Many suspected he would end the aduenture, seeing with what courage hee ascended the defended steps. But foure he wanted, when vnable to goe any further, hee was sencelesse cast from the Tower, hauing his Shelde set very neare vnto the haughtie Troians.

This knight was a valiant Pagan Lord, of Lesbos Ile, not farre from Troy. Who hauing landed a little after the Ladies came thither, at such time, that he well made knowne the prowesse of his person. Scarce had this stout Pagan lost his entrance, but Lyriamandros haughtie sonne, named Tersildo, presented himselfe, to be no lesse valiant then free from the vnweildie yoke of of loue. His Armour was of Azure colour, with many starres of Golde. In the middest of his shield, was portrayed a knight treading on Cupid, hauing his Bow and Quier broken: with this Motto.

Loue resisted is a childe,  
Suffered, is a Tyger wilde.

And a little lower.

The scourge of heauen, and earth, hell, sea, and land,  
Is scourg'd and maistered by a humane hand.

There was no Lady there, but græued at his free deuice, noz neuer did they moze wish any knights vanquishment, as this: thinking it was an iniurie vnto their sexe, to haue him liue at libertie. Quickly was their desire satisfied: for pꝛouing the entrance, he did courageously arriue as farre as the Pagan, whence with like violence hee was cast forth: whose unhappie chance did greatly please all the Ladies present.



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

sent. The nights approach with sable couerture, taking her place in Phoebus absence, brake off the instant tryall : whereupon the Emperour with his company returned to the Pallace, where was open reuelling.

Rosabell daunced with Lyriana, and euery Prince with his beloved Lady, to their incomparable ioy. All which, did but moze and moze grieue the Queene of Lyra, for wanting her Claridiano, she was not capable of the least pleasure : so was she there present onely, but in person, for her soule wandred to seeke him. Just guerdon for her straungenesse, which she long time was forced to suffer : for although he was in the Greeke warres, none knew him (as in the fourth of this part shall be exprest) nor would he be knowne to any, imagining his Lady to bee still displeased with him : whose sight did sufficiently strengthen him to tollerate his paines. But now we are intyoned to leaue her, and the disamorous pzoofe to explicate the manner, how the Princesse Roselia, and Arbolinda of Scotland were liberated, whome in the Forrest, thre miles from Rome, wee left enchaunted.

### CHAP. XXV.

How *Claridiano* and *Claramant* arriued at the Port of *Rotta*, where they founde the straunge enchauntment of *Roselia*, and what haughtie deedes of Chiuallrie they there performed in the company of *Alphebo*, *Branorant*, and *Don Celindo*.



Following the coming Willowes of the vast deepe sea, with their inchaunted barke (most belwtious dames) we left *Claridiano* and *Claramant*, with no small ioy, for the good successe of the valiant Greekes, and yet much wondred at the litle reason the Pyquean Souldan, had not to accept as his sonne in law (whom *Darius* would not haue refused) the famous Britaine *Rosabell*, Competito? with Mars himselfe in armes : and for state and royaltie, equall to the Greeke Macedonian *Alexander*. Of these & such like matters did the two Greeke warriors discourse, admirning to behold, with what swiftnesse their barke



### The third Booke of the third Part

cut through the swelling waues. And to see whether they could discern any Hauen or Arbo2, not long after they descried one, the sayrest and safest that they euer sawe, the which Claridiano ouerjoyed thereat, tolde his vnckle it was the famous Port of Rotta, three myles from the renowned Cittie of Rome, whereat they desired to land, because they wished to see a place so glorious as that.

Their will was quickly accomplished, for the Barke with incredible Vellocitie came a shore in the same Hauen, where the Princes imagined they were to abide: whereupon landing and mounting on their Horses, they tooke their best way to Rome, which Claridiano partly knew, hauing before bene there. And crossing a great wood, they came into a sayre playne all dyaperd with Floras fragrant Tapestry, ouer which an Imperious Castle seemed to commaund: whose loftie heigth and topleste Pyramedes, controwled the starry Firmament.

In middlest thereof, stood an Alabaster Tower, five wayes squared, the workmanship thereof, greatnesse and altitude, amazed the Princes. At euery edge of the square, it had three Bulwarkes of finest Jasper, so that the middle Tower was incompassed with fifteen Bulwarkes. Round about, it was walled, with a broad deepe Ditch, ouer which, fel a draw Bridge, to passe it: at the farthest ende thereof, there stood a mightie big Chrystal Piller, on which hung by Chaines of gold, five rich Hornes, a litle beneath, a Table with Letters, that yeldeo such splendor, as they almost depriued the beholders sight. Greatly did the Prince wonder at the strange rich Edifice, and so Claramant said.

Truly (most excellent Prince) this seemes to be a most gallant aduenture, if we may iudge it by the strong fortified bignesse of the Castle, Tower, and Bulwarkes, whose like, mine eyes til now did neuer yet behold: nor is it possible they should againe see such another. And therefore I much desire to reade the Letters of the Table, if you so thinke it good, to be certified therof, for least I be deceiued, this should be some Inchantment: and if it be, of no small esteeme should the person inchaunted be of. Answered would Claridiano, when through the aire they heard a hideous noyse, by the rising of a sudden whirlewind, with such horro2, that it seemed to leade a Legion of diuels after it, leauing the way desolate by which it past, renting by the rootes all y pines,

oakes



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

nakes and elmes it met. This sight confounded the Princes, who looking to see the ende, they sawe a blacke fogge rise ouer the ditch, whose obscure aspect, depriued Tytan of his bright rayes: but a litle after, the Welkin cleared, and Apollo being restozed to his former light, they discerned the Brigde raised aboue ten faddome high, hindering the passage ouer: and on this side, there was placed an other Pillar, but of Masse, with an inscription of Emerald Letters, that signified the aduenture. Not speaking one to another, they went to the Pillar, and hauing learned all maner of languages, they could reade this in the Germane tongue thus,

Let none, (though *Mars* in Armes) be so daring as to pretend the libertie of *Roselia*, vnlesse they be fiae Warriors, whose famous deeds haue through the world extended their eternall glorie: for till they shall be togither in this Forrest, the passage ouer the Moate shall be graunted to none.

Whereupon Claridiano tooke occasion thus to speake vnto his vnckle. I thinke (heroicke Prince) it is in vaine for vs to offer to proue the aduenture, seeing the words say, there should bee fiae that must doe it togither. Oh how should I reioyce, were we now accompanied with the strength of Paganisme, Brauorant, Bembo, and Brufaldoro, that we might vndertake this enterprize: but seeing the wise men haue thus ordered it, let vs if you please, go vnto the populous Cittie of Rome, where you shall see such antiquities, that without admyzation you cannot behold.

Be it as you haue said (mightie Lord) replied Claramant, for I wil in all things obey you. As these famous Princes of Greece were about to tread the next way to the Cittie, they heard a great noyse towards the sea coast, as if many knights were in battle togither, whose horroz of vnccontrolled blowes, was no lesse then that of Vulcans *Aetnean* worke-house. Slow were not they that were bozne to fight, in picking their swift steeds thitherward: and hauing cross the Forrest hard by the shore in a fayze plaine, they sawe two sturdie knights in Combat one against the other. A third of no lesse gallantnesse mounted, and leaning on his speare, beheld them.



### The third Booke of the third Part

To him went Mars his Competitors, and after due courtesie, Clarimant thus said. You shall not a little fauour vs Sir knight, to let vs know the cause of so terrible fight, which in mine opinion, will not cost lesse, then eythers life, with such furie they prosecute it. So much haue your kinde words bound me, (Sir knight answered hee) that I cannot in honour denie to satisfie all your demaund. Know therefore, that yon bigge knight in Russet armor, is called Brauorant, one of the strongest that this day breathes: who hauing taken part with the Souldan of Nyquea, in his last expedition against Grecia, where he lost most of his ships and men in the Pauall battell, as no doubt you haue heard: this knight left him of purpose, to sayle vnto his kingdome, to assemble new powers against the Greekes on the Souldans behalfe, hauing swozne vtterly to destroy them. And I, Don Celindo by name, desirous to see the high deedes of this most famous warriar, did offer my selfe to associate him, which hee refused not. So to morrowe will bee eight dayes, wee departed from the Souldans Flée, in a well rigged Shippe.

Long sayled we not with prosperous weather, but were by a cruell storme cast on this shoze: where finding this knight, the valiantest (as his fame memorateth) that euer the spacious worlde hath known, we knew him straight to bee the Emperour Alphebo of Trebizond (for treacherous Luperio had conducted him thither to end his desire.) Whom Brauorant knowing to haue beene on the Grecians side, and remembryng the waight of his cruel blowes, did on the instant challenge him: and for this slight occasion, they so batter and mangle one an others Armor and flesh.

No longer stayed Claridiano, but vnderstanding that knight to bee his father, drew forth his sworde and stepped betweene them, with these words. Withholde braue knights, for so fierce a quarrell is not lawfull on so small occasion, since the losse of eyther wil be a noted want vnto the worlde. Whereat the courteous Emperour leauing, replied.

In faith (braue knight) were it but onely in respect of your gentle speech, I would haue done it: how much the more, when I winne thereby, wanting an equall estimation with this knights valour.

How



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

How milde the Pagã was, being mildly, bled, & how tractable is already exprest: who now hearing his aduersaries gentle words, did accordingly make his answer to the Emperoz. So greatly haue your frendly words inchayned me to your obeysance (most mightie Lord) that thogh this knight had not requested it, I would haue desisted from the combat, especially, it being my aduantage, considering how fame thzogh euerie mouth blazoneth your worth, and my vnworthinesse. As Claridianas Lord would haue answered, Claramant intercepted him thus.

If (most valiant knights) the greatest part of your rigorous battel, hath bene to manifest vnto the world the rarenesse of your vnmatched strength, wherewith the heauens hath armed you, then go with vs, where there is occasion offered, whereon you may moze securely employ your redoubted valors in lawfull attempts of brauest armes, which may be vndertaken with moze sufficient reasons, then you began this your slender quarrell. For know, that at the end of this Forrest, in the midst of a faire plaine, we found a Forresse, which we iudge to bee the strongest on the earth, and reading certaine letters insculped in a Table, we perceiued it to be the inchauntment of the Princesse Roselia, daughter to the Emperoz of this land: and moze, that none but five knights togither, whose fame the world should report to be admirable, should pzooue the aduenture. Wherefoze since you be they (according to the conditions required) it were vniust we should neglect the libertie of so great a Princesse. And although my companions merits and mine owne, be not in the least degree, such as the aduenture challengeth, it shal satisfie vs to march vnder the shadow of such worthies, to end a moze harder enterprize. Whereto Alphebo replied. I am content to offer my person to the pzoofe, although in me there bee nothing meriting your praise: but the controuersie had with this knight, hath been ynough to teach mee to imitate his valor. I, & to haue stolne some part thereof from him to incourage me to this attempt. It shal not be left for me, (said Don Celindo) for in the company of such knights, the hardest is the easiest to be atchiued. Then Brauorant, it is not lawfull the libertie of so great a Ladie should be remitted thzough my meanes, although my fame nothing deserues your estimation. Then let vs no longer delay the triall of so happie a pzoofe (said Claridiano:) who presently spurred his swift Courser, leading the way vnto the braue inchauntment.



### The third Booke of the third Part

chauntment. Followed he was by the flower of armes: that alfo  
gither in short space arrived at the deepe mote, where they admired  
the greatnesse and exquisit workmanship of the Castle, whose like they  
accorded the world contained not: especially when Alphebo saide, it  
excelled that of Lindaraza, where he disenchanted his father, as in the  
first of the first part of this great Historie. No sooner were these valiant  
warriors arrived, when the draw-bridge (that yet stood on high) was  
let downe, which having past, they stept to the Piller whereon the  
hornes hung. The ingrauen scrolle of the Table they thus read.

When the five warriors the aduventure doth require, shall bee here  
together, if they be of such daring hearts, as to prooue it, let  
each of them hang one of these hornes about his necke, and  
winding them, the Castle gates shall be opened, and they may  
enter.

In performance thereof, these mightie Princes were nothing slow,  
but every one lovingly embraced one another, they each of them pre-  
sented themselves befoze either of the Castles, whose gates presently  
flew open at the shrill founding of the hornes, the eccho whereof, was  
also heard within the Citie of Rome. Throgh the doze that beset vnto  
the invincible Alphebo, issued a deformed ugly big Gyant, mounted  
on a lustie Courser, with a strong knottie lance in his hand, having a  
pike of well tempered Steele, aboue two handfuls in length.

Him Alphebo receiued with the swiftest running of his horse, the like  
did the Gyant, with such furie as the earth could scarce beare them,  
They met so strongly, that the gyants big lance flew in peeces, against  
the impenetrable shield of the knight of the Sunne, whose shivers his-  
sing throug the ayze, mounted higher then the proude toppe of the in-  
chantment.

The Gyants mightie speare was not of strength to pearce Alphe-  
bos shield, the which was resisted by the magicke spellles wherewith  
Lyrgandeo had forged it: yet was hee cast backwards ouer his saddle  
bowe, losing the raines out of his hand. I know not to what I shall  
compare the Emperour of Trebezounds incounter: for hitting the gy-  
ant in middest of his shield, he pearced it, together with the plates of  
Steele, and priue coate, whose inchaunted power vnable to defend the  
launce



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

lance guided by so bzaue an arme, he ran it thzough his left side, mortally wounding him directly on his heart, against which the strong speare bending, he broke it, and leauing a pæce in the wound, the rest flew into the middle region of the ayze. So passing forward, they met with such a shooke, that it deserues eternall memorie: for as the two warriors, incountred shield against shield, and bodie with bodie, the haughtie knight of the Sunne, first ranne against the Gyant vpon the speares trunchion, which hee so vehemently thrust thzough his bodie, that it cleft into his miserable heart: yet he scapt not so fræ, but felt himselfe so bzused on his Corneryno, that the poze horse was driuen to strike his buttockes on the ground, along whose backe his Maister fel, in such amazement, that he knew not whether he was in heauen or on earth.

But recouering himself, and iudging it cowardise, he set spurres vnto his horse, which made him fetch light carreirs vppon the ground. And looking after his aduersarie, he sawe him lie vpon the earth, voyding his blood as thzough a riuer: by him lay his horse with his shoul-der broken, and both at one instant accompanied each other in death. A little reioyced not the courteous Emperoz at his speedie good successe, and after his due thanks to God for his victorie, would not proceede vntill the end of Brouorants battell, whom hee iudged one of the best knights of the world, wherein hee nothing deceiued himselfe. Who hauing sounded the rich horne, whereat the Gates burst open, whence came forth a well proportioned Gyant, both bzauely mounted and clad in defensue armes, with a huge mace of selosseene greatnesse in his hands.

Against him made Bramarants sonne, brandishing his launce aboue his head: so did the Gyant with his mace: but in the meeting, Campeons Nephew mist his incounter, running his speare thzough the head of his aduersaries horse, who as Brauarant past by him, discharging his mace with such strength in the middest of his shield, the which (though enchanted) it battered and descended to his helm: where it fell so heauily, that maugre his courage, it made him bend his head below his bzest, and voyde much blood.

There is no Lyon crueller, nor chafed Bull moze furious then is now the inuincible Scythian: for hauing wel recovered his seat, & drawing forth his flycing blade, with moze fiercenesse then a thunderbolte, hee looked for his enemy, who he saw on fæet, with his mace aloft. Against



### The third Booke of the third Part

him hee went, but first brauely leapt from his horse, and griping his sword strongly twist his hands, he neglected to watch his aduantage, but let flie at the Gyant: so did he, and at once executed two blowes worthe such warriours.

Venturous was the Gyants blowe, for lighting on his enemies helme, although it could not breake the inchantment, it forced him to tumble headlong on the paved floze, where hee thought he sawe the twinckling of more starres then is in the firmament. The Gyant had no time to vaunt of his victorious blow, for with another nothing inferiour, his shield was cut in two, through which the sword descended to his helme, cutting away all the one side thereof, with all the top, the which had it fell right, his head had bene cleft in the midst: yet fell he to the ground on his hands, amazed with the stroke. The haughtie Empero, not a litle admired the strength of the combatants, much esteeming the Gyant, considering Brauorants disgrace: whom he animated, (though needlesse) with these words. Courage braue warriour, for there is much to doe: but making the world knowe the utmost of your singular valor, with it we shall easily liberate the Princesse Roselia. Though almost choked with choller, and blaspheming against himselfe, (for no God he confest) hee turned his head at those words, and seeing the knight of the Sunne not fighting, because he had already killed the gyant, there is no tongue able to explicate the furie that entred the fierce Pagans breast, supposing that knight excelled him, when he would not acknowledge Mars any superiouritie. And accounting it base fearfulness to let a single combat indure to the third blowe, foming through the mouth, he raised his sword and went against the Gyant, that was already vp: who well noted with what furie he came, and trusting to his Mace, cross it overhead, whereon fell the strongest blow bestowed in his time. For being possessed with the utmost of extreamest rage, & Brauorants son desirous to make known the might of his arme, hee discharged on him a fierce stroke worthe his valor) which falling on the mace, (whose inchantment being of no force) it cut it like as it were of wood, and sliding to the shoulder, where his armor was not able to resist the sharpnes of the sword, (guided by the strongest arme that euer the Gyantique nation knewe) it sliced him in the midst, diuiding the brutish bodie in two parts: which dede the knight of the Sunne so admired, as he iudged him to be sonne to such a father.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

father. Little had the fierce Pagan thought he had done, whereupon like an infernall furie he entred the gate.

All this while was not the Heroicke Claridiano ydle, for in the opening of the Portall, at the shynesse of the horne, there issued forth a mightie Centaure, with a big dart in his right hand, and in the other a chaine, by which he ledde a cruell Lyon. This sight daunted not the second Mars, but swifter then a Roe he prickt against the Centaure, that expected him, brandishing his steely dart, the which, ere the prince came neare him, hee flung at him with all the strength of his arme, it ranne thzough the shield, and wounded him a little on the bzeast, piercing his armoz, whose inchauntment could not withstand the sharpe- nesse of the spears.

The Prince hit the Centaure in the middest of his bzeast with such puissance, that had not his plates of fine tempered Steele, (wherewith he was armed) defended him, he had bene then slaine, yet he so thrust him backe, that staggering vp and downe, hee fell on the ground, at such time as his horse past on, which stumbling on y Centaure, fel shzetwo- ly on the earth, where it had cost Claridiano no lesse then the pzeice of his life, had he not vled his dexteritie, wherewith hee leapt at one side from off his back befoze hee fell, the which scarcely touched the ground, when the cruell Lyon with his pawes seized on him, and rent him a- sunder peece by peece, which much auailed for the Princes victorie, for whilest the Lyon deuoured the horse, he discharged at his pleasure the waight of his armes vpon his head, of the which, as much as the mur- thering sword did take, was cut away: yet the blowe was not sufficient to kil him outright, but rather rozing amaine, it forced him leaue his pray to flie at Claridiano, closing with him so speedily, that he could not shunne him, but with his sharpe clawes helde him so hard, that hee crushd his crimson blood thzough his armoz, gryping him closer then doth the little Remora cleaue to the keele of any shippe, to hinder her swift course.

In great anguish of minde was the warlike Greeke all this while, feeling himselfe so fast bound betweene the Lyons fangs, and seeing the Centaure come against him with a heauie naked sword. No remedie found Mars his Competitoz, but to draw his dagger, and stabbing it into his bellie, forced the Lyon with the pangs of death to leaue him, the which meeting with the Centaure, not knowing what it did, catcht



### The third Booke of the third Part

at his brest, which with his clawes he rent, letting forth riuers of blood thzough his mortal wound. Whereat the fierce Centaure forsaking the Prince, raised his blade on high, and with it diuided the Lyon in two. Which done, trailing the one halfe with him, he marched towards Claridiano, who wondzing at the sight, did so too, and on his shield tooke the beasts blowe, which he requited with a poynt that he thrust at him, which penetrating his plates of Steele, wounded him to the death.

Roaring like a Bull, the Infernal Monster towzed his sword aloft, which when he would descend, he was staied in the midst of his course, by the remorselesse stroke of death: whereat he fel downe, at the time that Claridiano thanked his God for the victorie. And imagining his companions were afoze him, he past on thzough the gate. No lesse fierce was Claramants renowned battle, for in the end of the hoznes shril sound, there appeared a wel disposed knight, richly armed and mounted, bearing a Launce in his hand, and a big Cemitoz at his saddle bow. Our new Mars nothing feared him, but spurred his hozle against him, and meeting in middle of their course, their shiuered lances flew into the ayze, giuing place vnto the furious shocke of their bodies. Trebatios sonne was saine to get about his hozle neck, for feare of falling, hauing almost lost his bzidle: but recouering his seat, he spied his aduersarie lie on the ground, groueling vnder his hozle, striving to get from it.

Courteous was Claramant, and so alighted to helpe his enemye, which kindnesse he had like to haue dearly bought, for thzough the gate that the knight issued forth, flew out a hideous terrible Griffon, who suddainly surprizing the Prince, clasped his bodie about, and with his sharpe fallents crushed his armor within his flesh, and vehemently fluttring his wings aloft, raised him a litle, purposing to haue mounted on high, and then to let him fall, and beate him in peeces against the stones.

It happened not as the beast intended: for the Prince noting how treacherously he had beene assayled, and feeling his flesh bzused in many places, and his armor with his owne blood bedewed, stretcht forth his armes on high, more intraged then an angred Tyger, and getting hold by his wings, pluckt him downe, making him lose his pretended flight, and so both fell on the ground,



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

And the haughtie Græke being of great force, turned vppon him, where refusing to vse any of his weapons, being extreame wꝛathfull, hee seized on either wing, which with the vtmost of his strength, hee pluckt away by the rootes, leauing the truncke without motion, voyding inuenombde goze from the wounds. Hee perfoꝛmed not this so safely, but he had his helme cleft in two, & a small wound on the head, the which the vgly beast had done with his enchanted bill, whose death preuented his further danger.

By this was the knight recovered, and with his shield and sword marched against the Prince, but what auales it:foꝝ Bryanas sonne being swelled with wꝛath, tarried foꝝ him, with his axe, who directed a blowe towards the disarmed part of his head. The angrie Prince would not receiue it, because he would not indanger his life, but leaping at one side, gaue place vnto his enemies blowes, whose sword ranne almost to the middelt into the ground, and he himselſe followed it.

The occasion would not Claramant foꝝgo, but like a Falcon at his pray, leapt to him, and with his axe strooke him to the earth, where hee tumbled vp and downe. So Claramant desirous to make an ende, closed with him. But the knight with the feare of death pluckt him vpon himselſe by the skirt of his armoz, making him lose his blowe, and casting his armes about him, thought to get some ground of him: but the vnhappie knight missing his purpose, the gallant Prince helde him fast, and setting one knee vpon his breast, with his dagger opened a passage thꝛough it foꝝ his hatefull life, sending him to bee waſted ouer the infernall poole, by the blacke Ferry-man of hell. Thanks did hee render to the god of his father foꝝ the victorie, and without further stay, as he would passe on, he heard a great crie, and turning his head, hee saue it was a Gyant dzagd about the ſeales by his horse, with one leg hanging in his stirrope.

The cause was, that Don Celindo hauing winded his horne, and his Castle opening, that Gyant on a mightie Courſer issued ſoꝛth.

Against him went Alicandros Nephew, but being ouer eager, miſt his incounter, and was by the Gyant strooke along his horse backe. Either paſt by the other brauely ſet in his ſeate, where drawing their



### The third Booke of the third Part

their strong swords, they laide such loades vpon their battered crests, rearing their armes, and mangling their flesh, vntill the Gyant slippt his bodie aside, to auoyde a blowe that Don Celindo let flie at him, reentring with a strong poynnt with all his strength. This offer of the Gyants got him no lesse then the victorie: for the inhumane wretch mist his thrust, and running the sword between his armes, it slid down the arme, bringing the Gyants head vpon Don Celindos horse neck, inclining it downwards, who seeing him so neare, and not omitting so good opportunitie, strooke him on the helme with his sword hilts, overbearing him on that side he most declined, which was the occasion of his fall from his horse, and thinking to haue stayed himselfe, thrust one leg so farre into the stirrope, that when he would, he could not draw it forth: whereat the Gyant noting his disgrace, drew his dagger, minding to cut it, but so vnfortunate he was, that somewhat annoyed with the former blow, he mortally wounded his horse bellie with the stroke, the which feeling it, with extreame pangs of death, fetching a Carreir, ranne about the field dragging his maister after him, where both ended at once, leauing Celindo thanking Fortune and his Gods for his good successe. Through the gates of those Towers that beset them, entered he & Claramant, and yet not with such hast as Claridianas Lord, that hauing scene Brauorants good hap, no longer delaying the time, fearing to be out gone, he past on til he came to a large yard of strange worke. And round about it, there was a Gallery supported with twentie pillers of cleare Chyristall. In the midst of it, stood a faire Fountaine, distilling water thzough diuers pipes, incompassed with Rose Trees, and other odoriferous flowers. On the top of the Fount, there was a rich and precious Armoz of inestimable value, lying vpon a Table of silver, with twelue seate of gold, whereat hung a braue sword. At the entrance to the yard, stood a reasonable Miller of Brasse, wheron was witten certaine words with Letters of Rubies. No further would Trebatios eldest sonne passe, til he had read the scrowle, containing thus.

What Knight soeuer would ende the Aduenture, it behooues him ere he passe farther, to win these Armes, for considering the keepers, he shall haue need of them: But if his courage failes to do it, let him go on, for the passage is free.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

So great pleasure and liking he conceived of the armour, that although he had not intended to prosecute the adventure, hee would have spent a thousand liues to obtaine them, such was his valour. Then couering himselfe with his shield, and vntheathing his sword, hee entered the yerde, and going towards the Fountaine, he saw it guarded with so horrible a Serpent, able to affray any but Alphabo. Shee was of a speares length, and a brace in breadth. Foure fette she had, and two armes, armed with nayles of Steele, a handfull long: and teeth too of that kinde.

Of these Serpents, do ancient wryters make mention, to be dull, heauie, and drowlie: insomuch, that no small noise will easily awaken them. A while stood the Emperour still, to see if she would rise: but noting her slouthfull sleepe, he went more neare her, greatly wondring at her ho:red fiercenesse, misdoubting humane strength against so terrible a monster. But his heroicke best, beeing vnacquainted with any feare, recommended his safetie to the supreme King of Kings, and with his sword strooke the vgly beast on her defensue scales, whereat, with hellish horro: she awaked. Against her went he, when she being on her fette, with her scaly tayle, she strooke him so fierce a blowe on his body, that the Brecke staggering, had like to haue fallen, but that his backe stumbled at the Piller, where he stayed. This much enraged the Emperour, who like a Basiliske awaighted her, he auoiding an other stroke wherewith she approached him, and then he discharged his blade in all possible haste, vpon her ribbes: but it happened not as he thought, for the sword rebounded backe, vnable to batter her scales, at whose strength he much wondred: and being about to second a poynt, shee entered vpon him: raising aloft her armes. Carelesse was not the warrior, and mistaking her embracements, wreathed aside his body, and as she would haue closed, he turned his sword, and therewith cut away her hinder legges, making her fall flat on her buttockes, howling at the paine of her wound. And lifting vp her truncke on her armes, swong about her tayle, and hitting him on the shoulders, she felde him on his handes, and as hee rose, got holde of his Armour with her nailles, and (furious with paine) rent away halfe of his armour, and had not he bene warie to looke to himselfe, with her teeth shee had made an ende of him.



### The third Booke of the third Part

But he seeing halfe his body disarmed, and fearing a disastrous death, shooke himselfe from her, hauing two peeces of his armour sticking in her iawes, imbrued in his purple blood, that issued from the wounds she had made him. There is no furie of Hyrcania, like to Claridianas Loner, seeing the yerde besprinkled with his blood, and himselfe vnarmed: that taking his sword in both hands, on the Serpents backe, he executed the brauest blowe that euer knight performed: for happening in the midst of her body, and the strong scales vnable to resist the sharpe of the blade, guided by the best arme in the world, she was parted in two, and the gates of her life opened to entertaine the freezing ayze of colde death. Infinit deserved thanks rendered the Greke to his Creator for the victorie: and taking off his torne Armour, hee went to the bubling fountaine, and being vered with thirst, drunke of the Chytraline water, remaining as well and lustie, as if he were neither wounded nor had fought, blessing the water and he that made it. But looking on the armes, hee saue them to bee the richest hee had euer before seene.

They were of russet colour, full of white and redde stars, made of Diamonds and Rubies, inchained one by an other, with knots of Golde. The shield did nothing differ from them. In middest of it, was the picture of a knight, naturally resembling the knight of the Sunne, when he maintained the belotie of Lyndabrides, vnder the tytle of the knight of the Chariot, as the first part of this Historie remembred. Hee was also mounted on a horse, the counterfeyt of Cornery no. The mote thus.

His power cannot be withstood,  
That hath horse, armes, and cause so good.

Slowe was not he to arme himselfe with these armes, and hauing in mind the libertie of Roselia, like a whirle-winde he passed through a doze he found in the yerde.

All this while, the furious Brauorant was not: idleso: hauing ended his first battle, he entered the gate from whence the Gyant came forth. Through Lymbo he thought he walked, so exceeding darke was his way.

A great while did he grope about the wall on eyther side, to find an



## of the Mirroure of Knighthood.

and issue from that dwelling, untill he found a doore: the which, althogh it was of strongest Steele, yet he quickly battered it with the pummell of his sword. Forward he passed, and in the end, he found himselfe to be at the gate of a faire hall, in middelt whereof, there stode the confused picture of a mightie Gyant, made of Brasse, with a sword in one hand, and in the other, a bigge sheld: and as the stout Scythian would enter in, the Fantasma made agaiast him. No whit at all was Cipeons nephew afraid, yet stood in great cōfusiō, not knowing in what maner to make his battle.

First arrived the Fantasma, and with incredible force executed his blowe on Brauorant: Helme: who having no sheld to ward it, was constrained to set his knees and one hand to the ground. A poynt was seconded with so strong a thrust, that hitting him as he was disordered, it laid him along vpon his backe. Upon him went the Fantasma, yet mist of his intent. For the strong Scythian did cast his armes about his necke, felling him to the floore, and in the fall, being within his reach, he gaue him such a blow on the mishapen face with his fist, that therewith he rowled him along the ground: and raysing himselfe, went against the vgly shape, that being vp did the like: but hee auoyding a blowe, with a flourish on high, he descended his cutting blade, paring away some of the shoulder, and halfe his arme. Which no sooner was done, but that part turned into an vgly Gyant, who hauing a Pace of Iron in his hand, said.

Thinke not (fierce knight) thy strength able to end the aduenture, for all the vniuersal power of the vniuerse shall not free thee from my hands.

Much amazed was the sterne sonne of Bramarant, seeing the Gyant before him, yet with most inuincible courage hee prepared himselfe for the Combat, and so comming towards him, offered to strike at his head, which made him lift his Clubbe to defend it. But Brauorant withdrawing backe his strong arme, stepped in with his right legge, and ranne at him with a mightie thrust. It cut all his Armour, and mortally wounded him on the belly.

Unrecompenced went hee not away: for the Gyant swaying his Pace about, hee strooke him therewith on the breast, and felle him to the earth, but hee quickly rose, ready to burst with rage, blaspheming



### The third Booke of the third Part.

blaspheming against himselfe, from which passion he was put, by the approach of the Phantasmo that came to wound him. But he scaping it, would turne his edge vpon him, but with the backe of his sword he strooke him on the helme, that it made him stagger a good way from thence, and then swifter then an Eagle, receiuing the Gyants blow on his blade, it cut his Face of Iron cleane in two. Which when Floralis Louer spied, he closed with him, and crossing his legges with the others, he brauely tript him downe, felling him on his backe, and then he stabde his dagger into his brutish bzeast, making him belch forth his soule to him that long before that expected it.

Now could not the vallerous youth so cleanly go away with this good hap, but that he was hit on the helme a heauy blow by the Phantasmo, the fine temper thereof saved his life, yet was he in a traunce laid along. On the shoulder the inchaunted shapelle Picture seconded another, which made him tumble on the ground, and as he went to thrust at him a furious point, he got on his feete, but so blinde with rage, that forgetting what had befallen, he tooke his sword in both hands, and with the utmost of his strength, he discharged it vpon his shoulder, diuiding the Phantasmo cleane in two. He had scarce executed the blow, but the couragious Pagan repented him thereof, for each part of the accursed Phantasmo, turned to a mightie Lyon, whose ferocitie could not but haue feared any other saue Brauorant. It amated the Pagan, yet not that he fainted, but with more brauery then in the beginning, held the point of his sword before him, letting the beasts come, whereof one thirsting for his praise, ranne vpon his sword, splitting his heart in two thereon. The other assayed him on his left side, where finding no resistance, fastened his claws on him: and although his Armour was strong, yet he pearst them, renting his flesh within, which but more kindled his fury, seeing his blood there shed, which til then had happened in no fight before. Bramarants sonne would not immitate Sampson in that action, because it should not be said he followed the example, but rather perfozmed an act no lesse memorable, for letting his sword hang by the Chaine at his wrist, he tooke the Lyon by the necke twixt his hands, and with incomparable strength choaked him, himself remaining both wounded, and with his Armour rent. There is no way like to his, hauing ended that perillous Combat, and although he was weary, yet went he forward, fearing his companions would be before him.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

him. No lesse famous were Claridians battles: for vanquishing the keepers of the first Castle, like a whirlewinde he past on, making staie at a litle narrow Lane, seeming to haue no end on no side.

Amazed was Archysiloras gallant, at the obscuritie thereof, yet he went on, and comming to the ende, vnawares he did tread in a holow place, falling into a Hauote, filled with nothing but Wormes, and venemous Hermine. It was but sixe yardes broade, and eight long: It yelded no more light, then what issued at a litle casement, where he espied a verie olde man, swarter then Chimnies sothe, who with a hoarse voyce said.

In faith (braue knight) you haue got verie good company among those Wormes, on them you may execute your reuenge: but I feare they wil first take it on you with their venome: and therfore your best way is not to strike them, if you wil not be slaine: for tis better to prologue your life a litle, then nothing to enioy it. Exceeding great was the Princes wzath, seeing himselfe so betraied into that pestilentiall Caue, and hauing vnderstood the Magitians words, blinde with rage he replied.

Small is the Conquest, got by such treachery, thus to betray any knight: which assures me, that he (which made this Inchantment) was more inured to treasons then good deeds, seeing without battles, by vndesent stratagems, he prosecutes his diuellish intent and purpose. Why then, that I may see how thy words will agree with your deeds (said the infernal Coniurer) there be within that place, two beasts, to whom all the rest acknowledge their obedience. Now if thou beest so hardie as to incounter with them, on their deaths depends thy libertie: else art thou for ever there inclosed. Although extreame wzathful, yet glad in some respect, Trebatios Nephew answered.

I am content to hazard my person in any daunger to issue hence, and for an instance thereof, shewe me the way I must goe forth, and then place the beasts there. Be it so (returned the Magitian) and in yonder dark corner there is an iron Ring, the which if thou dost pluck at, thou shalt descry whence the beastes doe issue. Slacke was not the Princely Greeke to goe thither, and getting holde of the Ring, hee pluckt so hard, that drawing a Plancke from the Wall, hee fell backwardes, with it almost vpon him, but fearing the suddain comming of the beasts, he quickly got on his feete: when against him



### The third Booke of the third Part

there came a Monster of straunge shape. His bodie was proportioned like a Beare, saue that he had a long Tayle, and crooked teethe, like Tulkes, and on his head, he had a horne neare a yarde long. His armes were nothing differing from a mans, being footed lyke a Lyon. In one hand he beare a Bowe readie bended, with a Steele Darte. And in the other, he had a Chaine, which tyed a mightie Bazelis ke.

Nothing daunted with the sight, was Claridiano, although a litle amated at theyr fiercenesse: but hauing an eye at the Darte, drawing his sword, and couering himselfe wel with his shield, he marched against the ugly mishapen Monster. Who shooting his Darte, did make it flie swifter then lightning. The Prince warded himselfe, receiuing it on his shield. And then the Monster hauing so done, he let loose his Companion, marching both together against the Prince. He also incountred them, and meeting first with the Monster, he let flie at his head, striking away halfe his horne, with all his Jawes on that side. Befoze he could second it, the Bazelis ke with his steely Will, strooke him vnder his arme, that it made him stagger thre or foure steppes, and stumbling on the wall, saued himselfe from falling. In manifest daunger of his life was the Greeke, for the wounded Monster rozing with paine, closed with the Prince (ere he could recover his last mischaunce) and casting his armes about him, would haue pluckt him backwards.

Here Alphebos sonne could no otherwise but doe the like, and hauing greater strength, and being moze nimbler then the Monster, lipt one arme betwene his legges, and hoysting him aloft, he flung him to the earth on his backe, and as he drew his Dagger to ende with him, the furious Bazelis ke fluttering his winges, flew on his shoulders, where with infernal fury, with his inchaunted Will hee strooke the Prince on the head, that it made him loose his blowe and that good occasion, and with his helme clouen, felde him a coside. In whiche season, the Monster rose, spitting fire thzough his hellishe mouth.

Straight did Claridianas sonne rise, but being halfe astonished of the blowe, the Monster had time to runne at his bzeast with his broken horne, which made him so recople backe, that he had much adoe to saue himselfe from a fall,

But



## of the Mirroure of Knighthood.

But what auailles it, all being for they worst: for the Prince (triseled with rage) tooke his Dagger in his one hand, and not knowing what he did, aimed it at the Bazeliske that came flying at him. Straigh- ter then the Monster shot his Darte, he flung it, and hitting him in the brest, it staied not til it cleft his heart in two, and flying out at his backe, fel with the beast at once, that with a hiddeous shrike stird no more.

This death greatly displeased the Monster, who bellowing, and spitting sulphure flames, leapt to the Prince that set his swords point against him, the which he tooke betwene his tushes, and rising on foote, would haue pluckt by the Princes kirt, but that he saued it with his shield, thzough which, as if it had bene of some composed clay, he thrust his clawes into it.

The haughtie warriour did let it go, and raising his right hand, (letting his sword hang by the Chain, the which he had already drawn from the Monsters mouth) he would needs make the Magitian witnesse his vnequalled strength, for closing his armed fist, he gaue the deformed Monster such a buffet, as he strewed all his face with his owne bzaines, making his eyes flie from the head, and he himselfe bellowing, fall dead at his feet: to the Princes exceeding ioy, though not to the Magitians, that would not any longer staie in the Window. Whereat the victorious youth without farther delaie, fearing to be outgone by the rest, past the doore he had so dearely discovered.

Admirable were these battles of the second Castles, that hapned to Alphebo, Brauorant, and Claridiano: yet nothing inferior to them, was heroicke Claramants, for hauing done with the first, he stepped thzough the Gate, receiuing innumerable blowes, not knowing by whom they were giuen: making him set his hands and knes vnto the ground: neyther his shield nor terrible Are auailed, not seeing his aduersary.

This so tormented our seconde Mars, that he beganne with all his strength to strike on either side, still keeping his way forwarde along a sayze Gallery, and being neare to the end thereof, the blowes ceast, at the opening of the wall whence came forth a wilde Sauadge.



### The third Booke of the third Part

In either hand he did leade a Centaure, bounde with a Chaîne, bearing in their hands long Semitozs.

The haughtie Warrioz not fearing them, with his shielde about his arme, and raising his Are with the other, went towards them. At first the Sauadge met him with an iron bat, leauing the Centaures behinde him: and at the Princes Helme, he let driue a terrible blowe. Claramant lifted his shield to take it thereon, the which was driuen with such fury to his head, that he could scarce keepe himselfe from falling. With admired speede the Centaures aymed they? Semitozs at him: And then he brauely turned his Are, striking one vpon his brest, felling him in a sound, and with a counterbuffle he cut away the others arme with his Semitoz.

Unrepaid could not Bryanas sonne scape, for the Sauadge seeing his Centaures so intreated, discharged his bat vpon his shoulder, with such monstrous strength, that maugre his valour, it strooke him down, falling vpon the astonished Centaure, that then would rise, who seeing him so neare, did cast his strong armes about, crushing him so hard that he could not stirre, giuing the Sauadge occasion againe to raise his bat, discharging it directly vpon the Princes head.

But he seeing it descend, with the vtmost of his strength, on the sudden got from betwene them, some halfe yarde away, and so auoyded the Batte, striking the Centaure so venturous a blowe on the brest, that he opened the Portall of his heart, with hideous horror, to vent forth his liuing breath.

Incomparable was Claramants content of this great good successe, yet was it not sufficient to expell his wonderfull exceeding rage, which made him as nimble and swift as a Koe, get on his legges, even when the Sauadge seeing the ill hap of his stroke, did discharge another.

Lightly did Claramant shunne it, and so the Batte finding no resistance, ranne one halfe of it into the grounde, and before he could fetch it out againe, the Prince with a downeright blowe easily cut asunder both his armes, and turning againe vpon the Centaure, with another mightie blowe, he claue him from the head to the brest.

And so leauing him dead, and the wilde Monster roaring with paine, he would haue passed to enter the breach the beasts had made in the



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

the wall, but he saw it close, not knowing by what meanes, and ignoring the cause, with raging furie, returned on the Sauadge, & with his axe wounded him in the middle, parting his brutish body in two: at the instant the wall opened, whereat thanking his Gods, hee went thorough the doore, fearing his stay might yeelde some aduantage to his companions, the which he would not acknowledge Mars to haue ouer him.

As lesse strong then venturous, was Don Celindos Combat, for when he saw the Gyants disgrace, hee valiantly put himselfe through a Caue, and being at the end thereof, comming to a great gate, he did tread in a hole, falling: yet happily as it fell out. For before the gate, there was a Vault, couered with a boorde made lesse then the mouth thereof, and fastened to a round pole, whose endes crossed the hole at one side, and so treading harde on the boorde, it ouerweighed the one side downewards, whereby he fell in: but the holes mouth being narrowe, and his sword hanging by his side, in the fall it crost vpon the hole, and so he hung thereat, ouer knees in water.

This vnthought mischance, daunted Meridiansonne, yet recommending himselfe vnto his Gods, he lifted vp his armes, and raising his body, cast it flat ouer the boorde, and as light as he could, with much adoe, he got out of the hellish place, thinking himselfe now to haue new risen from death. He had scarce gone thence, when he heard the voyces of certaine men, and listening, he heard them say: Come, come, let vs goe apace, and wee shall see how well the Rat canne swim.

A while stood the youth still desirous of reuenge. It was no long deferred him: for through the same gate that opened into a garden, there issued sixe swaines, euery one with his Bill in his hand. More destruction makes not the hungrie wolf among the tender lambs, then Floralizas brother of those villaines, saying. See here you villaines, the Rat scaped from your trappe, defend your selues from him. By this he had already cleft one to the waste, and ran an other through the body and heart. Amazed were they to see that the knight had scaped thir trap, and so trusting to their aduantage, they made him sometime kisse the ground with his hands, and then with his head: yet all did but increase his rage: For Alycandros Nephew being abashed to let them hold out so long, so swoong his sword among them, that hee killede one



### The third Booke of the third Part

head, an other with shoulder cut: an other without legges: and the last, armelesse, and all wanting their soules, hee sent them poste vnto hell: finishing with theyr liues, the ende of the enterance of the second Castle, and staying no longer there, he entered into the Garden.

Now is the time (admir'd Ladies, Goddesses of those soules that adore you) to lend me a little pittie, (the cynamment of your scye) equaling your magnificent bountie, with your rare and diuine bewties, suffering the sunnie rayes of your swete fauours, so to strengthen my harsh quill, (although immeritable) that I may expresse the fiercest battell that euer Mortalles heard of, woorthy to bee atchieued by none but the mightie Alphebo, deseruer of the worlds greatest Trophies.

Who hauing put on the best and richest Armour in the Uniuerse, tooke his sheeld about his Arme, and with his vntheathed sword, put himselfe through the gate in the yarde, staying in a roome darker then Erebus, and from the doore thereof, issued sulphire flames of fyre, making it resemble hell it selfe: and looking within the doore, he saw a great Hall, all of a fyre: wherein there was a huge Salamander, as big as any horse.

She had a great head, fashioned like an Eagle, with a Steele Bill, with clawes of the same mettall, of excessive length. Moreover she had a long tayle like a Serpents, and did nothing but voyd volleys of fyre through her mouth.

Much amazed was the Emperour at the strange fashion of the beast, especially, not knowing how to make his battell: for if he enters the roome, so great is the fyre, that it is like to consume him: and there fore he made a noise, to try if she would come forth, and so he strooke his sword against the gate, at which noise she arose, but would not moue: and being vp, looked at the doore, yet sturred not, and did cast more fyre from her mouth, then a smithes double bellowes rayseth with blowing.

Many times was Alphebo about to folloow after her, but iudging it ouerhardie boldnesse, hee would detaine himselfe: yet calling to mind his companions might outgo him, he thought the danger too small. So drew he forth his dagger, and stepping to the doore, hee threw it at

the



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

the Salamander, and the marke being so great, and aymed by such an arme, he missed her not, but thozow her ribbes he made it flye vp to the hylts, launching out her gozie blood. The wound did not harme her, for licking it with her tongue, it healed, but yet it put her into such paine, that any other but the Emperoꝝ would haue bene affrighted, hearing her hideous howling, and hauing an eye at the causer of his extream paine, with two iumps shee was with him. Backe stepped the Greeke, thinking shee woulde haue followed out, but hee rested amazed, seeing shee did not, but kept still within, rozing like a Bull.

Well did the Trebizonian Lord note it, and therefore taking his sheeld about his arme, and commending himselfe to his God, with his sword he marched against the beast, and offering to strike her, she being watchfull, turned about her scaly tayle, wherewith she made him lose his blowe, and recoyle thre steps backe. But being angred therewith, he returned with more aduice then in the beginning, and hollowing his body at her tayle that came again in the same maner, he thrust a poynt at her brest, running his sword a handfull into it. Shee shyked most horribly feeling the wound, and in the instant did spit so much fire, that some ouertaking him and getting into his Helme, it so heated him, as he thought his face to be a meere cole.

Two steppes did Alphebo goe backe to auoyde the fire, whence hee sawe that the beast touching the wound with his tongue, it presently healed, and shee instantly set her selfe at the very edge of the doze.

It greatly confounded the Emperours sences, to see he could not deuise how to vanquish her, and imagining her vertue consisted in licking her wounds, he determined to strike her on the head where her tongue might not reach it: wherfore couering himselfe with his sheeld, he went to her that expected him at the doze. He offered to strike her on the brest with a point, which the Salamander fearing, shrunke her body backe, omitting the vse of her tayle. So the Greeke Mars stepped forward with his hinmost leg, letting his sword fly at her head. He thoght it wold not lesse then cleaue her, yet found he such resistance, that glauncing downe it wounded her a little on the necke, which she straight curing with her tongue, it nothing hurt her at all.

This madded the sonne of Trebatio, especially to see how little it  
availed



### The third Booke of the third Part

availed him to wound her: so vnresolved what to do, hee concluded to receiue a blowe, and then follow her, to execute an other at his pleasure on her head, hoping her cure wold not be so certaine there. Thus determined once againe, he went to the doore, where she carefully alwaigh-  
ting him, and seeing him so neare, ere he could strike her, she cast her  
clawes vpon him, and gryping him hard with them, she not onely fru-  
strated his blowe, but plucked him so strongly, that the good Emperour  
could not so soone get from her, whereby of force, he was constrained to  
enter in, where scarce shee had him, but she graped him about y<sup>e</sup> middle  
with her Steele tallents, that had he not then had on the best Armour in  
the Uniuerse, without doubt hee had there perished. But though  
he had escaped her sharpe clawes, yet hee could not auoyde the  
cruell burning heate of the enchanted fyre that then incompassed  
him on all sides, chiefly that which issued from the Sallamanders  
mouth.

It exceedingly tozmented the Greeke, seeing himselfe so borne  
without remedie, and his Armour to glowe like a bright cole of fyre.  
And so with that furie, (hauing his death befoze his eyes) nimbler  
then a cat, leaping out of a fyre, he tooke holde of the Sallamanders bo-  
dy, and straining his strength beyond his power, feeling his flesh bzoyle,  
hee ouerturned her to the ground, and still maintaining his fiercenesse,  
he brought her to the doore, and although she there strived most to with-  
stand him, yet hee hurled her out of the burning lodging, where on the  
sudden shee dyed, enen as the fish wanting the water that nourisheth  
it.

With his dagger he went to wound her, but seeing she styred not,  
he went and found her dead, wherfoze he gaue his Creator due thanks  
foz so great a victorie: and without moze stay, hee disarmed himselfe, foz  
all his Armour was of a very fyre. Hauing done, hee felt himselfe  
so wearie and tyred, as euer befoze at any time hee hadde beene:  
and sitting downe vpon the Sallamander, he tarried the cooling of his  
armes.

While this cruell combat lasted, the haughtie Pagan, both  
Louer and subiect of the gallant Floraliza, had not bene idle,  
who abashed at his long staying in winning the passage of the se-  
cond Castle, went along through the hall, where he did find the  
Fantasmo, whose ende brought him into a fayze greene plot, in middell  
whereof,



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

whereof there was a Tower, circled about with a high steeple wall, which had no gate nor signe of entrance.

Amazed at this sight, the stout Schythian looked to the top of the Tower, where he saw a well accomplished knight, clad all in rich Armour, who with an angrie voice said. What thinkest thou knight: it is in vaine to seeke an entrance hither, for there is none: vnlesse thou wilt creepe vp the wal, which is impossible, and were it to be done, seest thou not I am here to forbid it: but were it not so dangerous, it is graunted to none, nor none shall ascend hither. In termes of answer would not the vntaymed youth procrastinate the time, but rather with greatest haste disarmed himselfe, keeping onely his Helme on his head, and his shield the which he cast at his backe, and his sword hanging by his side, hee drew forth his dagger (and being desirous to make his valour knowne vnto the knight) hee strooke it into the wall, and with both his hands plucking out some stones, hee clamored vp, and as he ascended, so hee stucke his dagger, for thereon sometimes hee sette his fete, whilest hee made his hands sure to mount.

Amazed was the knight, to see with what nimblenesse and dexterity hee did it, but fearing to be assaulted on high, hee flung down a great stone from the top. It fell vpon Brauorant's Helme, which with a sore fall, halfe sencelesse it tumbled him to the earth. Neuerthelesse, within a while hee recovered himselfe, being fiercer then any Lyon, an reuiling himselfe and his Gods, which others adored, he returned to prosecute his way: but with great care and watch to escape from an other fall, if the knight played as hee did before. Who much delighted to see with what courage Campeons Rephele clymed vpp.

Hee so occupied himselfe in gazing on him, that Brauorant had leaue to ascend so high, that when he would haue hurled an other, hee had no time to do it, for while he fetched it, which was some two yards from that place, the Pagan had got to the toppe, which being loath to lose, hee boldly leaped in. His sterne presence somewhat feared the knight, but seeing him disarmed, he recovered strength: yet it auaieth him litle: for Brauorant so charged him with a blow, that it cut his shield cleane in two, and descending on his Helme, made him set his knees to the ground.



### The third Booke of the third Part

It angered the Knight to bee so vsed, who stepping in with one foote, did let flie at him a strong poynt. By wresting aside his body, Mars his Competitor did shun it, and so suddenly closed with him, that standing but on one leg, he feld him on his backe, Ieuen when the knight drew forth his dagger, the which the Pagan being vnable to preuent, was enforced to let him go, who got vp, and moze irefull then a Bazeliske, going nearer, gaue him such a blowe on the helme, yet not able to penetrate, there it glaunced downe, wounding him a little on the shoulder.

Now was the furious Pagan mad to see his aduersaries blade reeke with his lukewarme blood: whereat detracting no moze time, escaping an other thrust, againe he closed with him, and presently taking him by the middle hoysting him aloft, hee instantly tumbled him headlong downe the Tower: where on the ground, with the extreame waight of his Armour, hee was broken in many peeces, and at the instant, the Tower vanished away with such a noyse, as if the earth were ouerwhelmed: so that Brauorant found him lefe beneathe where his Armour lay, and the dead Knight neare vnto him. There he armed himselfe, getting through a Gate hee had espied.

No lesse victorious remained Archysiloras Louer of the aduerture of the last porche. For hauing slaine the infernall beasts in the Vault, he went in at the opened wall he had descried, and crossing the row a faire Orchard, he came at last vnto a big strong Castle, shut with brazen gates, whereon were made certaine Letters of Emeralds: the which he thus read.

What knight so euer would end the aduerture, let him winde his horne, and the gates shall be opened.

Hee ended, making all the field resound with the echo of the Hornes shrill sound: whereat the gates flying open, there issued a mightie vgly Draggon, shaped almost like the Salamander. Doubtlesse any other sane Claridiano would haue feared his aspect: but hee that was bozne to fight, as if he were a weake knight, taking his Shield about his arme, went towards him with his sword drawne.



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

He warded a huge stroke with his scaly Taile: it strooke his shield from his arme, and had almost felde him. It intraged Claridiano, who stily setting himselfe on his fesse, thrust a poynt at the hellish beast, it had like to haue cost him his life, for the Dragon escaping it, as hee past, did strike him so terrible a stroke, backwardes vpon his gorget, that he was felde on his face.

Then would the fierce Dragon haue closed with him, but hee found Claridiano nothing remisse, who raging mad, with a quicke leape asidde, auoyded his fury, and turning vpon him, with his good sword he cut away his legges by the knees. With dreadfull crying shrikes, the wounded beast dzaling his bodie on the ground, would haue taken the Prince betwene his pawes, but being wrothfull, and this his last battle, with a downeright blowe hee cleft a peece of his head, and with a fierce thrust, cut his heart cleane in two, selling him dead at his fete, and so past on, desirous to ende the aduenture.

At one instant finished Claridiano and Claramant theyr Battails, although Trebatios sonnes was somewhat longer, because it was moze troublesome. For hauing slain the sauadge & the Centaures, hee paced that way they came, til he issued into a delightfull Plaine, where he was incountred by a gallant knight in hose and doublet, who said. So feared are Theseus Armes (Sy knight) in this habitation, that dreading the losse of the Castle, I am inioyned the Combat in this maner, and if you intend to passe on, you must doe the like: and therefore presently vnarme you.

The Greeke not refusing it, did straight put off his Armour: to whome the knight deliuered a Rapier and Dagger, with these words. (With these weapons must you defend your selfe, valiant knight). I am content, replied Claramant, and taking them, prepared for the fight.

The Greeke first setting himselfe, did with his Dagger strike away his aduersaries point, and with his Rapier wounded him with a thrust on the bzeast, and dzawing back his leg, controuled the others Rapier, that came directly to his head. The wound much greewing the knight, made him respect no tricks of Art, but ranne against the prince, who fearing his vnaduised desperate coming, crost his rapier against the other, and so staied his fury.



### The third Booke of the third Part

out he burning with ire to be so prevented, thought to haue slaine him with his Dagger, imagining Claramants care was onely in the prevention of the rapper, but it was not so: for he stretching out his arme further, did first stabbe his dagger into the knights shoulder, which made him forgoe his purpose: whereupon the Prince hauing opportunitie to drawe backe his sword, did it, and suddenly with a strong poynnt wounded the knight mortally in the flanke, which altogether made him faint.

The wounded knight seeing his date of life expyred, despairing of remedie, he hurled his dagger at him, with the utmost of his strength, that he miraculously scaped an untimely death: for Claramant chancing to take it on his hilts, the poynnt thereof was stayed at the Pummell, and had it not there found that resistance, it could not but haue run it vp to the hils into his body.

Amazed was the Greeke Prince, iudging that, the moment of his byeth, but going to take his reuenge of the knight, hee saw him splitted on his owne rapper: for seeing himselfe deadly wounded, and that hee could not escape with life, chose rather to bee his owne executioner, then the Prince should tryumphe ouer his death at his hands. Joying at the victorie of so dangerous a Combat, hee prosecuted his way.

No aduantage had Claramant ouer Don Celindo, who ended his fight as soone as he: for hauing slaine the Swaynes, and passed the Garden, hee came vnto a greene Meade, where a knight gallantly mounted, expected the battle: not farre from him there stood a Piller, wherefo a lustie courser was tyed, the which Alicandros Nephew imagining to be for him, he did quickly back, and taking a strong knottie Launce that he also there found, eyther parted from the other, to take his carreire, and valiantly made their strong encounters.

In middest of the sheelde did Don Celindo hit the Knight, and clearely piercing it, thrust him so strongly, that breaking his saddle gyrtes, he tumbled him from his horse. The knight strooke Don Celindo on his Beauer, which so astonished him, that he let goe his horse bridle, who feeling his head at libertie, eleuated himselfe so high, that both fell downe, yet Don Celindo perceiuing it, befoze the fall, did quickly leape from his backe.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

With shields about their armes and swords on high, the two braue warriours met. With a furious thrust did Don Celindo first wound his aduersary, which made him giue backe three steppes. But he presently returned, and gaue him such a blow on the helme, that he thought himselfe in heauen, so many starres he saue about his head, and with a counterbuste on the shoulder, he had almost felde him. Like a rauening Lyon became Floralindas sonne, and offering to strike him on the head, the knight repaired thither with his shield. It was the cause of his ouerthrow: for Don Celindo not minding it, with a point wounded him mortally on the brest, pearcing all his Armour, and then with mightie strength turning his sword to the others head, he cut away halfe his helme, with a peece of his scull. Howling and shrieking with the wound, the knight turned his backe, and fled through a faire Gallery.

After him went Don Celindo, ouertaking him in a great plaine, where he saue foure great Arches inchasse with pzeious stones, held vp with eight mightie Chrystal Pillers. There did Don Celindo assaile the knight, euen when a bewteous Lady most richly attyzed confronted him. He was astonished at her sight, thinking he saue his deare Rosiluera.

Stay your hand braue knight (said the Lady) and doe not execute your wrath on him that yeelds you the victorie. I cannot (most soueraigne Princesse replied he, amazed to see her there) but satisfie your content, obeying what ere you shall impose on me: as he only borne to do your seruice: yet is my poore soule tormented with grieke, that this commaund is no greater. It is too much (answered she) for her that hath showane you no kindnesse: and so the craftie Damzel taking him by the hande, placed him vnder the last Arche, leaving him there inchaunted, without iudgement or vnderstanding, sauing how to accomplish her wil, who leaving him there said, Here must you remaine Svy knight, and defend the entrance gainst all the world, if all the worlde shall come. Be assured (Lady) I wil (replied the inchaunted youth) and first I leaue to breathe, then desist from defending the Arche. Away went the Lady along the Arches, when the furious Brauorant came thitherward, hauing put on his Armour. He slept backe as one in a traunce, inagining he behelde his Floraliza, into that shape she had transmuted her selfe.



## The third Booke of the third Part

The Pagan so admyzed her sight, as he was strooke dumbe, but she reuiued him thus. Come with me braue knight, for we greatly neede your strength. He did not refuse it, saying. Leade the way (diuine Ladie, replied he) for it is my felicitie to lose my life for your betwite. Leading him by the hand, the deceitfull Ladie left him inchaunted vnder the third Arche, saying.

Courteous knight, this Arche must you defend, with the utmost of your valloz. He made answer. Leane that care to me, for wil at least shall not want, if strength forsakes me not. At another Gate by this, appeared Archyfiloras Louer, to him she went, representing the Queen of Lyra. Whom (to be short) she also inchaunted in the second, and in the first did the like by Claramant, having on the presence, and countenance of the famous Lyndabrides, whom he by report alreadie began to fancie. Then like the winde she vanisht away, yet ere she went, she commuunded them on their liues, they should not go out of the Arches, vnesse they would embrace theyr deaths. And so leauing a scroll vpon a Piller, she left them.

### CHAP. XXVI.

How the Emperour *Alphebo* ended the famous Inchauntment of *Roselia*, and what else happened.



So great was the care that those wise men, Lyrgandeo, Artemidoro and Nabato had ouer the Greekes and theyr Empire, that by theyr Arte had reached to the knowledge, how that memorable Monarchy would be brought to the point of an utter ouerthrow, and perpetuall desolation: wherefore so entierly affecting her Princes, (as this great Historie hath amply mentioned) for their Loves, they reuolued their booke, to know the cause, and causer of such bloodie warres: which they found to be the two Princesses, Lyriana of Nyquea, and Roselia of Rome: whereupon they resolved to Inchaunt them, beginning first with Lyriana, within the sea Tower, as hath bene related.

And



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

And seeing that the Romane Princeſſe was left, they ioyned themſelves together, in the making of this Inchantment the ſtrongeſt euer ſcene, for while ſhe was ſo kept, her Father ſhould not knowe what had happened betwene her and Don Eleno of Dacia, nor ſhould ſhe at his hands require reuenge againſt him. As they did determine it, ſo did the wiſe Magitians perſorme it, making it far ſtronger then Lyrianaſ, for they intended to keepe her long time there, vntil ſome good order were taken about the Grækes affaires.

Againe, they reſolued to haue Lyriana diſinchaunted, and her Pup-  
tials with the Brytaine Prince ſolemnized, hoping it wold be a means to reconcile the Souldan of Nyquea, giuing him ſo great a Prince as Roſabel to be his ſonne in lawe. They wold not do ſo by Roſelia, be-  
cauſe ſhe could not be wedded with whome ſhe had impzinted in her heart. But the peruerſe Selagio (by meanes of Luperccio) hunting after reuenge for the death of Fangomadon (whom Roſicler ſlew, as in the firſt Chapter of the firſt booke of this third part is expzeſt) wold needs procure the libertie of this Lady, with Arbolinda of Scotland, that accompanied her: for which purpoſe, in a Barke he drew Brauorant and Don Celindo, from the flecte: doing the like by Alphebo, directing alſo Claridiano and Claramart thither: where all of them perſormed ſuch deedes in armes as is ſpecified, and worthe of ſuch great Princes, ſlaying all the keepers of the Caſtles.

But the wiſe men fearing the two Ladies libertie, as the laſt refuge of their hopes, erected theſe ſoure Arches, there to Inchaunt thoſe mightie Warriours, that none might end the aduenture, they being the ſole Pillers of humane ſtrength. Twentie yeares they purpoſed the Inthauntment ſhould ſtand, finding by theyr Art, that after that time Greece wold flouriſh with moſt happineſſe, by a contracted League, with the greateſt Potentates of the world. But the ſupream King of Kings, hauing otherwiſe diſpoſed of thoſe affayres, fruſtrated (as you ſhall ſee) theyr toyles, bzinging thither at that time Alphebo, ſole Phoenix in armes, valloz, and all beuntie.

So much the longer he ſtaied, vntil his armoz was coole, and then buckling it on, paſt the laſt Portall, comming to the Arches, at the very inſtant the Lady had done inchaunting the knights, and lighting on the Piller, he thus read the inſcription.

Let



### The third Booke of the third Part

Let none though he be *Mars* in Armes, pretend to passe forward, for what is done, is nothing comparable to what is to do, seeing he must Combat with the Myrrors of Chivalry, *Claramant*, *Claridiano*, *Branorant*, and *Don Celindo*.

The Trebezonian Lord did feele his blood freeze in his bodie, hearing his strong Companions were there inchaunted, and among them his sonne, for whose sake he greatly dzeaded the fight, fearing some ill mischaunce either to him or his sonne: for he deemed none equalled Claridiano. Oh, Claridianas Lord wisht his sonne thence, and in his place the whole world: for that power united, he not so much did doubt. As he was thus considering with himselfe, he heard a voyce (that by Selagios procurement said) What doubts thou Illustrious Empero? Consider it is not woorthie thy great valor to refuse these Combats, for they endes shal conclude the famoussest deeds in armes that was euer heard of.

Altogether did these words put him from his pensivenesse, iudging his delaie to proceed from base cowardise: wherfore as swift as a Roe, he went towards the first Arche, when he heard the noyse of certaine voyces, that said. Leane, leane, this accursed enterprize, thou mightie Alphebo, for with the blowes thou giuest to one knight, thou woundest Bryanas soule, and with those thou dischargest on the other, thou doest split her heart, to whom thou owest all content: thy deare Claridiana we meane.

Backe stept the Empero, not in feare of the Battles, for his heroicke mind was not bled to it, but to haue vnderstood those words, yet supposing they were vttered only to threaten him, rather desiring to die (oh admirable courage) then to be tainted with cowardise, recommending himself to his true God, he began to march towards the first arch, being nothing hurt by the Inchantment, for the vertue of his King defended it, the which he alwayes woare, wherewith he freed his Father from Lyndarazas imprisonment, where he atchiued immortall fame. He had no sooner entred it, but like a blazing Comet, Claramant issued to entertaine him, (vnknowne to his brother) by reason of the inchantment. At that time a gallant window opened, where appeared two ladies, whose bewties stained Venus in her pride, there come to



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

to beholde the battels. At length together met the two haughtie combattants, either receiuing the other, with the puissance of their strong terrible blowes. They discharged them on the toppe of their heads so rigorously, that squadrons of sparkles flew from their helmes. Either did set one knee on the ground, bowing their heads with such low congies, as if they had knowne themselves to be brothers. Both remained angrie and fearefull of the others strength: so rising, they gaue beginning to the hammering of their bodies, as if it were a battell of twentie knights.

The Emperors new wonne armor, did well defend his flesh from the cutting of Theseus are. Neuerthelesse, within an houre of their fight, he felt his bodie sorely bruised, yet he comforted himselfe, seeing his aduersarie besmeared with his owne blood, hauing his armor rent and tozned in many places, but yet as lustie as when he beganne, and raising his are, he laide on the others shoulder. The impenetrable armes he may thanke for his life, the which they saued, though not him from touching the earth with his hands. And so the valiant Prince seeing this good occasion, closed with him, that either cast his strong armes about the other, to procure eithers aduantage. Soone got Clarimant ouer the Emperoz, because he assaulted him with a suddaine aduised charge.

But Claridianos Louer hauing recouered his soyle, made him loose his ground, and so ouerturned him of one side, that crossing his legge with his, he tript his brother, who fell vnder him: yet as swift as an Eagle he got vp, and grappling together, they tumbled vp and downe the paved earth.

Where seeing they could not so vanquish one another, let go, repairing to their weapons, with such mightinesse & heauie blowes wounding their bodies, that none saue they in al the world, could suffer them: yet did not they faint, nor loose no whit of their fierce courage, whose furie being thoroughly heated, seemed to increase their strength and ardent, becomming so nimble and quicke in assaulting and retiring, offensing, and defending, that their fate seemed to be winged. Greatly did Alphebo wonder at his aduersaries fierrenesse, iudging him one of the best in the vniuerse, calling to remembrance the battell he had in Constantinople with his brother Rosicler, about the Princesse Lyndabrides.



### The third Booke of the third Part

He could not devise how to get from him that arch, supposing his victorie consisted thereon. Committing himselfe to God, and trusting to his forces, auoyding a thrust, he closed with Claramant, and before he could prevent it, he hoysed him from the ground, who vnable to forbid it, he carried out of the arch, but with exceeding labour, for Claramant with the utmost of his power strived to let it. He was no sooner thence, when as one dead he remained in the Emperors armes, who laying him downe, imagining hee would revieve with the ende of the aduventure, he past that, till he entred the second arch, where against him, came the Mirroꝝ of courtesie & fortitude, the magnanimous Claridiano. Almost did his father knowe him, by the maiesticke gate & comelynesse wherewith he made against him, giuing him so suddain a blow, that ere he repaired to the defence, hee descended two thrusts, which sorely vexed Trebarios sonne, making him stagger three steppes back, and before he recovered himselfe, he gaue him a downe right blow on the helme, which made him see many millions of fire sparkes. It greatly enraged the peerelesse Alphebo, who seeing himselfe so handled, forgetting that he was his father, and he his sonne, did most terribly discharge his rich blade vpon his shield.

It yeelds no defence against the best arme in the world, for in two peeces it was throwne to the ground, and descending to the helme, finding there more resistance, it made his head bend with an awfull congey due to his authoritie, and kisse the earth with his hands, and as he rose, with a strong poynt he was ouerturned to the ground. Long was he not so, but rising like the winde, blinde with rage, he took his sword in both hands, discharging it on his fathers shield, the which resisted the edge, was stroke with such might against his helme, that he thought the firmament was within. With his knees on the ground he so remained astonished, till the sound of another blowe vpon his shoulder awakened him, to stay himselfe with his hands from falling.

Neuer did Alphebo feeles himselfe more chollericke, nor furious, nor neuer by one battle so indaungered: but fearing to be overcome, with madding rage he went against him he tended as his soule, and on his waste gaue him a most mightie blow.

It made him incline his bodie that way, for cutting his armor, it wounded him a little, sprinkling the ground with his crimson blood. With a counterblow the Emperoz returned, hitting him on his Coz  
get:



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

get: vpwards bounded the sword, & falling on the buckles of his helm, it cut them all, making it flie from his head. With admiration did the Trebizonian Lord gaze on his picture, in such carelesse manner, that Claridiano had time to strike him at his pleasure on the middest of his precious helme, and straining the utmost of his strength, he felled him downe, making the blood gush from the closings of his helme. With more eagerneſſe doth not the ſozing hawk ſeiſe on his pray, then Claridiano cloſed with his father, and caſting his armes about him, thought to choke him betweene them, at ſuch time as the fierce Emperoz returned to himſelfe.

Oh, then did hee wiſh to haue any other then Claridiano betweene his armes, (I, though it were the God of battels himſelfe) to inflict on him the deſerued puniſhment for ſuch vſance, the which hee could not now do, vnleſſe he ſhould poluze vengeance on himſelfe. But hauing good hold on him, with ſome trouble at length hee liſted him from the ground, and with violent ſtriving, oppoſing his greateſt forces againſt his ſonnes reſiſtance, with blood guſhing from his face, he carried him out of the arch: and leauing him euen like Claramant, hee felt his bodie neuer wearier in all his life.

A while hee ſate him downe at the foote of the ſame arch, to reſt himſelfe, and putting off his helme, hee wyped his bloody face: but with the ſight of the two Ladies in the window, whom he iudged to bee Roſelia and Arbolinda, remembryng their freedome, he rebuckled on his helme, and marched to the third arch, where Brauorant, the flower of Pagans ſtrength, incountred him with a ſtrong poynt.

On his ſhield did the Emperoz receiue it, againſt which the ſword bending, forced him two ſteppes backe. Another ſeconded the Pagan on his breaſt, making him vende his bodie backward.

And comming vppon him with the third, Trebarios ſonne gaue way vnto the furious poynt, which finding no ſtay, it dzeue the hardy Scythian after it. Whom Alphebo following, ſtrooke him on the ſlancke, and vnable to cut his armoz, he bruſed his fleſh within. This blowe chafed the fierce Pagan, who like a Baſſeliſke, with Mars his ſtrength, did let flie at him a mightie blowe.



### The third Booke of the third Part

On his shield did the Emperoz take it, the which was strooke so against his helme, making it thunder like the stormie heauens. And then he gaue him a cruell thrust, that had not his armor beene the best in the world, he could not but haue incurred mostall perill. The Greekes respected no trickes of defence being so handled: wherefore like winters hayle, he charged the Pagan with his blowes in such sort, that hee rested amazed at the Emperors fiercenesse, yet fainted not his shewen valor in the beginning, though his owne blood had besmeared his armor, whose inchauntment was not of force against the cutting of Alphebos sword.

About this time, the Greeke with all his puissance, gaue him a blow on his helme, whose force greatly inforced him back, which occasioned the Emperoz to execute his intent, so noting with what blinde eager furie the Scythian came against him, the polittick Lord returned back by little and little, euen to the first Arch. So Brauorant thinking hee did it so feare, hastily followed him, and beeing almost out of the Arches, he heard a voyce that said: Returne, returne, renowned Brauorant, and remember Floralizas command: go not out of the first arch, so if thou doest, thou art but dead. Great was his affection towarde that Ladie, hearing himselfe called by her owne name, amazedly turned his head, supposing she was there. Which happie occasion Bryannas sonne would not lose, so watching such opportunitie, with one stride he toynd with him, hoisting his bodie in the ayre, and beeing neare out of it, maugre the Pagans strength, he threw him forth, leaving him as one dead.

Infinite thanks did the Greeke render vnto God so this victorie, and without longer stay, he paced to the last arch, kept by Alicandros Nephew, with whom hee had one of the brauest battels in the world: so the aduantage the Emperour had ouer him in strength, the other supplied by being fresh, and he wearie and tired. It so pleased the beauteous Roselia (being one of those that looked on them) to see with what dexteritie and valor Don Celindo prosecuted his fight, that shee purposed (though shee was enchanted) to make none Patrone of her heart but him, if she wedded not Don Eleno. Here doth not Lyrgandeo particularize this combat, because he would not be tedious, onely hee affirmeth it was one of the famoussest that euer was: and how in the end he was as his companions carried out of the arches, but with a  
new



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

new wound, for while he made his battell, he chanced to behold Roselia, whom he so well liked, that hee almost forgot the faire Rosiluera. Exceeding great ioy conceiued the Greeke Mars, to haue wonne the Arches, and as he returned thzogh them, a Ladie incountred him with these words.

Know, illustrious Emperoz, mirrour of the worlds chiuallrie, that the end of this aduenture consists in giuing me that ring on your finger, to put it on your wife Claridianas that yonder lieth, and it behoues you to do it with speede, for else her life is short, and readie to expire her cancelled date, by the hands of that knight which stands ouer her. Towards the place whence the Damzell came, he turned his head, where he thought he saw his Claridiana lying on the ground, and ouer her a knight with a dagger in his hand, wherewith he offered to stabbe her. No longer stayed the haughtie Greeke, but like a furious Lyon, leauiug the Ladie he ranne to the knight, who fearing to be slaine, (being Nabato so disguised) together with the damzell vanished away: wherewith the Emperour wondzed, as also of the strange aduenture of the Castle.

In the end of the arches, he found a large wide paire of staires, made all of pzeious stones, hee ascended them quicker then a hurried bullet from a cannons mouth, and beeing at the toppe, hee saue a faire rich Gallerie, from whence the Ladies viewed the battels. At the ende thereof, he past a gorgeous Portall, that opened into a great Hall of admired riches: and as he would enter into it, two Ladies saluted him, whom he thoght to be those before mentioned, being indeed the Princesse Roselia, and Arbolinda. With much courtesie the Emperour returned their salutations, and to bee assured if they were whom the Tables mentioned, he demanded of them thus. Let me intreate you faire Ladies, to tell mee where within this dwelling I may finde the Princesse Roselia of Rome, and Arbolinda of Scotland, for I much desire to see them, to know whether it bee true, what the world reporteth of their beauties: Then they said. With one condition (sir knight) we will lead you where they be, which if you denie, it will bee impossible to see them. Demaund what you will (replied the kinde warriour) for I will perfozme what euer it be.

We hoped no lesse from your valour (said Arbolinda) and therefore we pray you giue vs that ring on your finger, that we may carrie



### The third Booke of the third Part

It to Roselia, that greatly needs it. I am content (answered the wary Greeke) but first go we beyond yon first Arch, & there I protest by the faith of a knight, to performe my promise. What is to denie it (saide Roselia) for wee may not go any farther. Why then soueraigne Ladies (replied Alphebo) I recall my promise, intended on this condition.

If you be so resolved (saide Arbolinda) farewell, for we must go vnto the Princesses, unworthy of your discourtesie, that because you wil not performe your promise, shall here remaine inchaunted, vntill the comming of some other more kinder knight, to pittie them. I do so greatly desire to be absolued of my passed word (replied the Greeke) especially (as you sayd) Roselias libertie depending thereon, that I intend perforce, (crauing pardon for my boldnesse) to carrie you where I may giue you my ring, and be freed of my promise. Whereto Roselia said.

You will not I hope, intreat vs with such violence, for it is not the part of a good knight, to oppresse distressed Ladies, inforcing them against their wils: which to preuent, wee will leaue you, returning to Roselia, that expects vs. As the gallant Ladies were turning their backs, Trebatios sonne stept to them, and tooke them in his armes, and in his going out of the Gallerie, many hideous fearefull strikes were heard, and he charged with mightie inuincible blowes, ynough to haue dissolued Vulcans work house: yet for all this, did not the flower of armes cease to go forward, sometimes setting his hands, and sometimes his knees to the ground, and then inclining his head belowe his breast.

Many terrible illusions were opposed against him, sufficient to daunt Mars himselfe. But they nothing feared him, for the magnanimous Alphebo, by this had descended the staires, and although tormented with oppressive blowes, confronted with horred apparitions, and his hearing made deafe with miserable howlings, yet hee got out of all the arches, at what instant there sounded the lowdest and most shrillest noyse, with the mightiest thunderclap that euer was heard in the world. Tenne myles from Rome it was heard, making that famous Cittie shake as with an earthquake, utterly dissoluing the best inchauntment that euer mortals heard of.

In midst of an oderiferous plaine, did Alphebo find himselfe, clad  
in



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

in his rich Iron armor, with his son Claridiano, that equalled him in all things: with them the mightie Claramant, in all respects comparable, to brother and Cousin.

There also was that furious Brauorant, Waragon of the Gyantean regions, accompanied with the new Louer Don Celindo: and with them, the beauteous Princesses, Roselia and Arbolinda. Well remembred Brauorant what had him befallen, and thinking he had by him bene vanquished, would haue challenged the Emperour of Trebizound about it, but that he descried a great company comming through the Forrest: and supposing it to be the Emperour of Rome, hee tooke his leaue of the Princes and Ladies, who were not able to stay him. And comming to the sea side, he shipped himselfe in his Barke, which in short time brought him to the Souldan of Nyqueas Fleete. Claridiano and Claramant would also needs depart, imagining they were not knowne, shaping their course towards Grecia, because they heard the world prepared against her.

Alphebo would not hinder their voyage, seeing it pleased them to conceale their names, and so he tooke his leaue of them. By this arriued the Emperour of Rome, whom the noyse of their battels, and the beasts howlings had brought thither: and alighting from his Alfana, he embraced his daughter Roselia, and Arbolinda, with such ioy as may be thought. In the end (to be short) Don Celindo recounted what had befallen, which made them all wonder, admiring Alphebos valours: who also vntwilling to be longer detained, tooke his leaue and departed. So shipping himselfe, arriued in Constantinople, where he at large discoursed the whole processe of the aduenture. Don Celindo remained with Roselia, whose disinchantment was solemnized with many triumphes. Thus leauing them all, we returne to the valiant Princes, Claramant, and Claridiano, navigating by sea in their enchanted Barke.



## The third Booke of the third Part

### CHAP. XXVII.

How the two Princes, *Claridiano* and *Claramant*, arrived at *Grecia*,  
and of the faire aduenture that befell them with a knight.



With more furie then the dreadful threatening Comet renteth his passage through the fire element, did the enchanted barke wherein those two Princes navigated, furrow the raging billowes of Neptunes inhospitable regions, directing their course towards the memorable Grecian Empire. So swiftly did it cut the foaming waues, that foure daies after, in sight of the Greekes Fleete, that anchored in the Haven of Hircambelia, and not farre from it they ranne a shore. It not a little gladded them, knowing where they had arrived, for *Claramant* greatly desired to see that Court, so famous through the world.

Being on land, they mounted upon mightie horses, which *Galtenor* had provided them, with a shield for *Trebatios* sonne, and so toke their iourney toward Constantinople, hearing by the way of the p[ro]ofe of the disamorous Tower: the discourse whereof, *Claridiano* tolde his vncle, which was the greater motion to stirre him to the triall. Whereunto his Cousin said. And it comes well to passe, that the earth may know, how both by land and sea, you are *Mars* his favorite: but I would not for the world, be there knowne, for being banisht by my sweete enemye from her deare p[re]sence, I should not well obey her commaund, so to disclose my selfe. Thus treating of this matter, and of *Roselias* strange inchauntment, iudging it the haughtiest ever heard of, *Claramant* began in this manner. It would reioyce my very soule, to know that famous knight, called of the Sunne, for as I suppose, we were all vanquisht by him, and the glozie of that great aduenture solely attributed to him. Because I imagine you will bee glad to knowe who he is, (replied *Claridiano*) knowe, it is the Emperour of *Trebezound*, whom the heauens decreed to be my father. I am exceeding glad thereof, (said *Claramant*) and sure I was, so valiant a sonne could not but proceede from so glorious a father. But I also de-

fire



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

fire to know who those three knights were, that kept the arches of the Tower in the sea: for beleene me, they are the flower of Armes. Two of them (replied the Prince) I can tell you of, the one Bembo by name, King of Achaya, and Lord Generall of the Souldans flecte: the other is a most strong Pagan, King of Mauritania, and mortall enemye to the Greekes. The last, yet seeming of a bigger constitution of composed members, I knowe not, saving that it was he which in our compaignie proued Rosilias inchantment, being he we met in the Forrest, in battell against the Emperors my father: But the time is long, and we may end any particular combat, for I no lesse desire it then you, since I crost him on the seas, when I defended your ladder. In this conuersation they came vnto a cleare riuer of fresh bubbling water, which invited them to find out his spring, to passe away the heate of the afternone, for the Sunne hauing progreess halfe his course, had alreadye dyed the mysterie of the earth. Within a while they found a faire fountaine, where they allighted, both to wash their faces, and take such repast as Pollisandros prouision afforded. Thus they droue away the time with some content, for Claridiano for his vncles sake controwled his griefes, when his Ladies remembrance troubled him. So being desirous to take a nappe, they parted a litle one from the other to sleep. Short it was, for the Musicke of a swete voyce awaked them at once. Whereupon Claridiano said. Haue you ever heard (braue Knight) more sweet harmonie? Beleene me, we haue met with some good entertainment, for he that sings, in my opinion, should liue by being in loue. We may not leaue the enioying of so swete a note. So they rose together, and putting on their helmes, tooke their shields and followed the sound they heard, and then ceased. They came vnto a little groue beset with loftie Pynes, there saw they a shepheard, of the fairest disposition in the world: and so beautifull, that his sight wold haue made him enuious that kept Admetus flockes. He seemed to be very young, holding a Recorder in his hand, to whose sound tuning his voyce, he sung his soules greefe vnto those sencelesse trees.

Credit me, Prince of Grecia, (said Claramant) that some chance in Loue hath made him so disguise himselfe: for although there be gallant shepheards about these and other fields, yet this his tender behauiours shewes, he hath not bene brought vp to tend sheepe.

Let vs attend him (replied Claridiano) for hee himselfe will resolute



### The third Booke of the third Part

this our doubt. They needed not much perswasion to make them listen, for the sweetnesse wherewith he sounded his Instrument, was sufficient to moue, as did the Thracian Poet his melodie, which when he ended, he warbled forth this Elegie.

Great must needs be the grief, extreme must needs be the torments  
Which I do feele while I want (faire *Polinarda*) thy sight:  
Esteeming thy sweet presence my sole happines in life,  
How may thy long absence but be a death to my heart?  
On this staie yet I liue, in thy disgrace that I liue not,  
For then in endles plagues damned I were to perish:  
Rather as one whose sincere Loue was kindly regarded,  
On the highest heau'ns-spheare placed I was by thy hand:  
Golden dayes were those. But now dispoiled of all blisse  
Like sad *Bellerophon*, ioyles I wander alone.  
In darknesse I do straie, missing thy Sunne to direct me,  
My day to night turnde is, my delite into laments.  
Vexed thus though I am: Complaine on thee yet I cannot,  
Of thee (Ladie diuine) for loue I had loue againe.  
Spightfu'l Fortune it is, that of all ioyes hath me bereaued,  
And with deadly malice crost me with heauy mishaps.  
Distrest by Fortune, yet neuer will I be daunted,  
Maugre her, and her force, will I loue, and be belou'd:  
Enuious ill Fortune cannot compell me to dispaire,  
When she hath her worst done, then can I be but a wretch.  
Then when I most am a wretch, most constant shalbe my hope then,  
Which without her compasse firmly by faith I do keepe:  
Her force will not I feare, nor seeke for her helpe that I lou'd be  
Oh fayrest of fayres, on thee alone I depend:  
In presence was I lou'd, and shalbe I doubt not in absence  
(Lady, in whom vertue like to thy bewtie shineth,  
Constant as comely). Bur alas, that I must like a Pilgrime  
Wander a whole age thus through regions so remote,  
Kingdomes farre distant, where I wish in vaine to behold thee,  
Where new sprung dangers hourelly delaie my returne  
From thy sight banished, whose siluer rayes be so splendent  
That therewith dazled, *Cynthia* hideth her head!



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Expect yet do I still, and that day daily do looke for,  
In thy sweete presence once yet againe to reioyce:  
Conuerting sadnesse to gladnesse, sorrow to singing:  
Rapee in blisse, then I shall perpetually triumph.  
In meane time resting on this so sacred a comfort,  
This thy want perforce with patience I do beare,  
Till the raging tempest of Fortunes fury be ore-blow'n,  
And I of all turmoyles shall haue a happie release.

No more could the two valiant Greekes vnderstand, for the vehement grones that burst from his soule, together with hart-breaking sighes, drowned the verie sound of his words. Now that he had thus giuen a litle passage to his griefes, by publishing them vnto those loftie pyres, that by bowing their spreading bzaunches, seemed to pittie his distresse, with a breathlesse (A y me) he began his laments in this manner. Oh Loue! how extreamly hast thou executed the power of thy rage on me? Oh my tender yeres, eclipsed in the budding of your spring, with the nipping winter of sower griefe: Iniustly hast thou made me an example of the happiest Louer that euer was, neuer hauing against thy soueraintie so much as in thought offended, nor yet in any thing gainsaid or contradicted thy awfull power. Oh I acknowledge it, and do confesse what happinesse is obtained, submitting true dutie to thy commaund, as to the sole deitie able to giue life, or sweetest death: and yet so, all thou art long since assured with what submissive humblenesse I haue obeyed thy behests, and with patience endured thy crosses, so dearely bought, at the highest rate and price of my content, it pleaseth thee, when the soueraigne Goddess of my soule, would most fauour me, to exile me her presence by such cruell meanes. On me, and my poore heart, that neuer did offend thee, hauest thou tyrannized with all inhumanitie, winking and pardoning the Conspirators against thy rule.

What hast thou got by absenting me from her stamp in my living soule? wherein wert thou offended, when I beheld her presence? were it not I feare to be accounted Traytoꝝ vnto thy Crowne and Principallitie, I would call, and proclaim thee (ouer and besides that thou art cruell) to be enuious: and if not so, that Jealousie (plague of mortals, and immortals) to see me loue and liue thereby, and in recompence of so firme a faith, to hope for the glorie of being againe beloued,



### The third Booke of the third Part

hath forced thee to make me in exile wander thus from that her happie presence.

I neuer haue seene tokens of a perfecter Louer in my life (saide Claridiano) and as I am a Knight, if it lie in mee to helpe him, I will doe it to the daunger of my life. Of this and moze is the Louer worthe of (answered his vncle): but I would not haue had you bound your selfe vnto so much, wherby you should omit your iourney to Constantinople, the which would grieue my very soule, especially losing your company. To doe so would increase my sorrow in the highest degree (saide the Prince) because our loue bindes vs to grieue at others absence: yet will not I remit to procure his content, that know how to loue so intirely: and it may be, I shall this way find some measure for my torments: knowing that her sight (Commandesse of my soule) will but augment my paines, by being in disgrace: and what great glozie it were to be embraced in her grace.

But go we to him that learned to loue, and not feare the plague of absence, for neuer yet did any feele it, but iudged it worse then death. Let vs go (replied the free youth) for it is charitie to helpe him in all thinges. Whereupon they made a little noyse, that the carelesse shepheard might heare their going. With some alteration he did rise, supposing some other matter. But when (by Mooneshine) hee saue those two knight, the riches of their armour, and so gallant disposition, he went to meete them (being no lesse courteous then any) and saide. What is it you this way seeke (braue knights?) for although Fortune hath brought me to the last poynt, to make me dispaire of my selfe, so I may in any thing worke your contents, helpe me, I will be glad they should, for that time lengthen my despised life, then which I could not be moze plagued.

Whereto Claridiano made answere. Wee come this knight and my selfe, to offer our persons to procure your content (courteous shepheard) if your necessities requires them, the which we shal hazard, with moze will then you to imploy them. There is no satisfaction, nor yet gratefulnesse, sufficient to ballance your most kinde offer (gallant knights, replied the shepheard) but in doing it, you haue made known the valor and magnanimitie of your heroicke minds, whereto by boundtie you were bound.



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

Oh, may Loue recompence it (if it hath not bene possible to denie his soueraigntie) with more loyes then I at his hands haue receiued: but now any comfort whatsoener, will but augment my greefe, the which hath so far extended it selfe, that no remedy nor salue can cure it. Then Claramant tooke occasion thus. But although phisicke doth not alwaies whole cure the inueterated Gallady, yet many oftentimes it pzeuents, and expelles many dangerous accidents, that would else exceedingly aggrauate the infirmitie, and so for all it may not now please you to communicate it to those that will feele your sorow, it will be some consolation to see the pittie it, were it but to be answered with (take comfort, for others haue bene vled with like crueltie, and you are not alone despised in the world).

It is euen so, said the amorous shepheard: for amongst all the greatest consolations inuented to mittigate the paines in loue, to communicate them, is the cheefest: yet in me to discover them, it is an offence against the partie I loue. But to tell the torments I haue endured, and what happinesse they had obtained, and my extreame fall from that high felicitie, were to wrong my selfe in the recitall, for it will be but an argument of little sufferance in me, seeing that the least of my suffered paines was sufficient to withstand a thousand deathes: But now to consider they haue let me suruiue, oh, there is no euill comparable to it, nor none can I deuise worse. For had I then bene depriued of my abhorred life, I shuld not haue bene so familiar with sower greefe: yet to see that after the losing of that soueraigne good, my life doth still persecute me with woes, that death fearing to come neare them, flies from me when I most do call him: oh there is no patient that can endure this, nor I haue power to tollerate it, but with millions of continuall teares, to bewaile this losse and my misfortunes. Farther hee could not proceede, for his teares interrupted him, which so moued the tender hearted Prince, that they entreated him to make them partakers of his griefs, that they might iudge whether he haue reason so to greefe.

Then the shepheard said. I am sure it is good to relate the fear and proesse of my woes, vnto such knights: yet my distressed soule refuseth to refresh the memorie with so many euilles: but that you may know how small this my languishment is, sit you down, and you shall heare the greatest iniustice that euer was vled towards any:



### The third Booke of the third Part

he bring assured of my faith, that doth reward it not as it deserves, but according to his pleasure, as a Tyrant.

They all sate them downe vnder the couert of a spreading Oake, where the Shepherdes put off their Helmes, whose bewties admyred the shepheard, who with some sighes moving them to silence, he began, Since you be pleased (Sir knights) to haue me recount the Pilgrimage of my oppressed life, and who I am: so that seeming to receiue content thereby, I shall not need to intreate you to yeeld me that attencion, my manifold sorowes do deserue.

I know therefore (most Noble warriors) how that imperiall power that doth command both Gods and men, pardoning none of no kinde, I meane Loue, soueraigne of all soueraignes, hath inforced me into this disguised habit: And yet when I ponder how extreamely the blinde Goddesse is bent against me, I finde my selfe not secure therein: for I haue ere this bene honored, and as a Prince acknowledged, vntill my farre-croft loues, exile me through the world. This heart-infecting Deitie (gallant knights) when in greatest pompe and iollitie I liued in Apulia, (whereof the Heauens allotted me Prince) sent and conducted thither those, whose tongues were tuned with the dulced notes of the gallantnesse and bewtie of the Princesse of Lucania. With such deepe rote did her faire name insert it self within my free thoughts, that it is now impossible to leaue to loue her, in that both she and I haue by a hidden grace, accorded in one thing. But I doubt it is the nature of our climate, or they that breathe therein, by custome to bee subiect to like misfortunes.

What shall I remember Hanniball, who had hee not knowne Apulia, then had hee not beene insnared in this passion, but beene Lord of Rome, and not through loue, ouerthrow his eternall honour, wonne with such losse of his owne blood. Yet was not this example of any force to diuert me from my new imaginations, but rather in greatest haste I prepared my iourney towards Lucania, whither I went, onely with a Page, my horse and Armour, soly to see Pollinarda, and if her perfections equalled the fame of her bewtie. I arriued in time when it most flourished, because the Court was then full of knights that serued her. And in faith beleue me, that how far soeuer the report of her prayles exceeded beleefe, so farre and moze did I finde them to limp behinde her excellencies I noted.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

In my opinion the heauens haue not created a moze absoluter beſwtie, becauſe Enuie it ſelfe hath found no meanes to ſeiſe thereon, and therefore is become the Herauld of her worthes. You may think (Noble Sir) theſe were new ſnares to intrap my captiue ſoule. A ſumptuous triumph was ordained in the Citie, which in auncient times was called Froſſa, which in the Aſſyrian tongue, ſignifieth happy. It was ſo indeed, and euen from the beginning, for ſhe neuer had a Queene, but was alſo in beſwtie ſo.

This occaſion did Fortune offer me (oh ſhe did further me to make my miſhaps the greater) placing me neare vnto a brother of hers : by name Lyſander, a knight both young and valiant, and in loue too with the Infant of Campania, that in court accompanied the princeſſe Pollinarda : high Soleſia, no leſſe beſwtifull then kinde, who knowing how ſhe was beloved, wold not ill repay Lyſanders faith, and ſo the gallant liued in ſome reſpects aſſured of his hopes. Oh, yet neuer had any full aſſurance, if he ſtill will be amorous. On the aduerſe part, was Leader, the valiant Prince of Calabria, Ageſilao by name, the happieſt that I knew, in that without the panges of paſſions, and ſoules afflictions, he obtained to be beloved of Pollinarda, and in ſuch open manner, that the whole popularitie did know it. It did not greeue my Ladies father, but rather it ſo pleaſed him, that in open ſhew he expreſſed it, which moze animated the Lady to grace him with new fauours, which were ſharpe pointed daggers, ſtucke in the heart of wofull Floriſiano, for ſo am I named. Oh it could not be leſſe, beholding with my owne eyes my owne ſorrow.

At length the Jouſts began, wherein my ſtarres vouchſafed a little to aduance me, which did attract Lyſanders affection, with ſuch true zeale, that there cannot bee firmer frienſhip then that hee hath ſhewen me : yea, although againſt his ſiſter.

The whole multitude turned their gazing eyes on my deuice, which was, blew armes, croſſ with yeallow barres. It accorded to the ill my iealous ſoule endured. On my ſhield was portrayed ſuſpition in her naturall colour, as in auncient times ſhe was painted, bearing a ſcrowle, with this word.

Wiſely,



## The third Booke of the third Part

Wisely, who can her despise,  
That onely doth employ her eyes  
To spie out Loues subtilties.

There was no Ladie in the place, but noted my iealous colours, and so (as I after vnderstood) some that were moze pittifull, prayed for my victorie: which maketh me think their orizons and good will abode me the honour of the iousts. So Lysander (that greatly affected me) and I, cleared the place, that none wold moze aduenture: and hauing don, yet did I not disclose my selfe, neither to him nor any other, although the King himselfe was very importunate to know me: onely this they got, that I was called the iealous knight. Sure I am, that my Ladie being so busied wth Agelao, shee did not note my deeds, but rather (soz it was told me) she was displeased, that I vnknown, had vrhoised her Louer in the Lisses.

Needes would the Prince Lysander haue mee to his owne lodging, professing himself so intier a friend, that he hath wenne me to the death: the which I will gladly receiue, to procure his content. In greater bonds did he tie me, altogether exp:essing his much noblenesse, by discovering vnto me, the sinceritie of his loue towards Sofia, Infant of Campania. I could not but highly esteeme of the trust he reposed in me, being but a knight, possessing nought but armour and horse. He intreated me to accompanie him that night in a Walke, because the king his father in honour of the iousts, feasted all the Princes with shews and reuellings. It pleased me in my soule, in that I should behold her presence that gouerned my heart. In two long robes of cloth of golde we issued, masked: yet would not I go so vnprouided, but that I had on a priue coate, which in my wandring daies I vsed, bearing armes.

In this manner we entered the Pallace, when the reuels began. Every Ladie that had her gallant there, sanoured him, to daunce with him. Of these was my deare friend Lysander one, whose Mistresse was attired in the same colour that we were. They daunced with such grace, that Cupid himselfe could not but like it. Next to him, did Agelao take Pollinarda Princesse of beautie, by the hand. I cannot denie what the heauens had imparted them, soz their grace and Maie  
die



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

He, admired all the Hall. Many excellent changes and tricks they bled,  
yet the iealous passion of my græued soule stirred by more in my face,  
by coming and going of my running colour. Had not my friende  
bene there, rather then I would haue suffered it, my heart vpon a two  
edged sword should haue bene split, or I reuenged. The beloued youth  
was famous to be an excellent Musitian, as indeed he was. So his  
Lady (or rather espouse, for her father had agreed thereto) gaue him a  
Lute to play thereon. He accepted it, (for he was fully bent to per-  
forme her will) and began to touch it with more sweeter musicke then  
hee that descended to the infernall vaultes to fetch his wife. Then with  
a cleare voice he warbled forth this Dittie, the which my memorie car-  
ried away, the more to increase my paine.

That brow, which doth with faire all faires excell,  
Those eyes that shining lends the world his light,  
That gracious mouth where all the Graces dwell,  
That dimpled chin, the whetstone of delight,  
Those two rare Mounts, of Lillies and of Roses,  
That in their swelling, all content encloses.

That brow, eye, mouth, chin, and most daintie cheeke,  
Doth call, keepe, hold, bind, and in giues restraine  
My heart, eye, eare, my thought, and iudgement, ceke,  
That no wise force, can free me thence againe.  
Yet do I loue my pleasing paine so well,  
That boue all ioyes, I prize my heavenly hell.

Let dunghill basenesse and the earthy mind,  
His *summum bonum* place in what he list:  
My soule (which strange diuinitie doth find)  
Within thy faces centure to consist:  
Will not consent that any other bee  
My onely good, but onely, onely thee.

Thy brow, shall be the dreadfull snowy Barre,  
Where I will daylie for thy mercie plead:



### The third Booke of the third Part

Thy shyning eye, my path-directing starre,  
Thy mouth, the Lawes, which I must keepe, shall read.  
Thy chin and checke, shall equall power beare:  
The first to cheere, the last to keepe in feare.

And thou thy selfe, (Goddesse of my desire)  
In my Hearts temple, dayly Ie adore,  
No other Deitie will I admire,  
No other power diuine, will I implore:  
Great Goddesse keepe me, in thy fauour shine,  
My heart, eye, care, my thought and iudgements thine.

Thus did he runne vpon the treble with such heavenly melodie, that had he not bene Agefilao that sung, beleue me vzaue knight, I would haue liked it: but being done by the enemye to my rest, it was worse then hell vnto mine eyes, that saw it. And in faith, his song was but the mere truth, although she was too cruell towards him, yet was I the cause, as I shal tell you. No imperfection was noted in the continuance of his Harmonie: So hauing done, he laide by his Lute, the which the Princesse bequeathed to Solesia, who in compassion of my (as shee thought) ill placed affection, warbled out this cold comfort.

Feare not faint-heart, Tyme may prooue  
A soueraigne plaister for your Loue,  
Such a faith so firmly grounded,  
Such a Loue so kindly placed:  
From a Heart so deeply wounded,  
From a person so well graced:  
Needs must get the Hearts desiring,  
Though hope, yet seeme not to say it.  
And though this Tyme seeme retyring,  
Tyme heereafter may repay it.  
Feare not faint-heart, Tyme may prooue  
A soueraigne plaister for your Loue.

I did not conceiue the meaning of her conceit, vntill I vnderstood  
shee did suspect I affected her Couzen, and so to put mee in hope  
(being



## Of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

(being glad I accompanied her Louer) shee animated me, with that I did requite it, when it pleased Loue to do by me, as by then assuring her how intierly she was beloued of my friend, whereof I had experience, in the many daies I continued in Lucania. I thinke Lysander did perceiue the affection I bore his sister, yet hee shewed him so like a knight, that he not only dissembled it, but seemed to reioyce, & with my hopes might take place, if that the Callabrian had not bin the between. But being no longer able to indure the pestiferous plague of iealousie, on the foure Gates of the Cittie, I secretly caused so many shieldes to be set vp, wheron, vnder an vnknowne name, I named my self maintainer of the ring, an exercise and pastime much vsed in that land, by reason it is near vnto the Spanish soyle, whose nation, challengeth the sole preheminence ouer this exercise, as skillfullest and principall Authoꝝ thereof.

No knight in the Cittie would admit it, seeing the Callabrian did refuse it, vnlesse I did expresse my name, the which, in that I could not do without danger of my life, I granted notwithstanding, that any should openly defend Pollinardas beautie, which I by another name couertly maintained. Whereupon Agelilao presently subscribed, and and after him many prepared to winne at the ring. The day being come, you may thinke (bzaue knights) he would shew himselfe in the richest manner he could, as a Prince so famous and happie. So did the Ladie attired all in white, adding such vertue to her excellencies, that had I not been inurde to suffer discontented paines, my perplexed heart would haue burst.

The sport beganne, wherein hee behaued himselfe according to his Ladies fauours, with which it had not bene much, hee had perfozmed much moze. There were wee, my friend Lysander and my selfe I meane, in seuerall colours, soꝝ his attire was greene, imbzodered with Artechokes of golde, manifesting a maiesticke minde. But I still with iealousie tozmented, durst not but differ from him, apparrelled in yellow, laced with blew and golde; and mounted on a mightie Courser, which from Apulia I had bzought. My companions posie agreed with his content.

My hearts heart, likes my heart, and I againe,  
Like my hearts heart, so both content remaine.



### The third Booke of the third Part

His Lady well understood it, for she tendered him as her soule. Mine was despairing in this manner.

Dispaire, I yeeld, sith all things do agree,  
Into thy clawes, to drine despairing me.

Valiant was the gallant Lysander, to whom I granted the first course, whose prize he wonne, which was a Pelican, by nature cruell to himself, onely to become kinde to his kinde. It, did Solesia receive with greater ioy, then I possessed, seeing my Ladies betwix so ill defended: yet was I reuiued in my drouping thoughts, hearing how all the multitude adiudged Pollinarda stil to be fairest. After him I took my turne, where in the heauens so aided me, that at euery carreire, I tooke the ring on my lances point. Then in signe of victorie, I had a Crowne of golde deliuered me. They could not haue giuen me a thing y more might please me at that occasion, for I had an other ready made of purpose to present her, if I issued victor. Making my horse set his knees on the ground, I presented them both, but about my prepared Coronet, I had caused to be engrauen this posie.

Well deserues her head a Crowne,  
Who Crownes with praise all womankind:  
Therefore, Loue hath sent me downe,  
As token of his louing mind,  
A Crowne, to Crowne the Crowne of Nature,  
Soueraigne of all earthly feature.

Peare me was Agelao, when I presented the prizes. He presently suspected I was hee that had vanquished the Iousts in the same colour, since when he noted it by many occasions, as also how I affected his lady. So trusting to many friends and kinsfolkes he had in the place, yet chiefly thinking I was vnarmed, and being spurred with a iealous frenzie, he stepped to me, so did my friend, suspecting there would be some hurlyburly: He thus said. I know not knight, whereon thou hast grounded thy presumption, so to deliuer the prizes in such preiudiciall manner. Whereupon to moue him, I replied. To see how ill the excellent betwix of this soueraigne princeesse is defended: for if accordingly some were so rewarded with fauour, you might with as great right go without it, as an other that I know.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

He was bolde of his balloz, and being toucht to the quick, he dres to his sword against me. He had got nothing by the aduenture, so: saving my head, I was else all armed, and with mine in my hande, at two steppes I was within him, so neare, that he had not satisfied his boldnesse with lesse then his life: but we were separated by the standers by, that it proceeded no farther then in words.

Every one blamed him, which encouraged me (without respect of displeasing my Lady) to challenge, & cast him my honours gage, as a warning he should be alwaies provided, against wheresoeuer we met. He departed thence, and I so angered, that I thought it long til I incountred him. Now the Revels of that night being ended, the two were contracted with the Fathers publike consent: and the houre of rest approached, every one withdrew into his lodging, so that Agesilao possessed with excesse of ioy, and forgetting my challenge, he closely with two men got him vnder his Ladies window, where, knowing what pleasure she receiued with his Musicke, he played this Dittie vppon his Lute.

What ere he is that would behold,  
Imperious *Cupids* sporting place:  
Here to gaze, let him be bold,  
On this bewteous comely grace.

Here doth rarest bewtie dwell,  
On her brow doth *Cupid* sit:  
This is she that doth excell,  
Both for her bewtie, loue and wit.

In her *Cupid* taketh rest,  
Ioy and blisse with her haue end:  
Who knoweth her, is double blest,  
Whose bewtie day, to night doth led.

My rage swelling heart, could not suffer him to proceed farther, so: with moze fury then my feare would allow, I rusht vpon him, saying: The time and place doeth now fit (discourteous Prince) that the death of one of vs shall testifie the balloz of the other. I being alone, and



## The third Booke of the third Part

himselfe accompanied with two, made them the bolder all three to assault me: I refused them not, but valiantly put my selfe among them: I mortally wounded one, which gaue me way the sooner to meet with the unhappie Prince, who so little liued to enioy his louing hopes: for driving him before me til he was vnder his Mistresse window, with a strong thrust I ranne him through: where the blinde Goddess of Chaunce, seemed yet to fauour him, as to be stucke to his Ladies wall. At the last grone wherewith he yeelded his soule, I heard another, the fearfullest, that euer before or since I heard, because it proceeded from Pollinarda. It so daunted me, that I had like to haue bene taken, all the knights guard, with others, being thither come. As secretly as I might I shrunke away, til I had time to set my safetie on my fate, getting to my Lodging, saying nothing of what had happened vnto my friend, yet had he questioned me about it, he could not but haue perceiued it. What else befall, the next Chapter shall rehearse.

### CHAP. XXVII.

How the Prince of *Apulia*, with much pitie continued the discourse of his life vnto the Greeke Princes.



**D**o proue how many dangers, and perillous inconueniences the disordinate passion of inconsiderate Loue doth cause, there shall neede no arguments nor preambles of large discourses to auerre it: for the experience that every one sustaines by paines and griefes thereof, together with the opinion of that famous Philosopher that said: If this disordered Motiue of intemperate and furious motions, had not bene indangered in the breasts of mortalls, as some plague and scourge for euils, infinit and Capitall deadly crimes had neuer bene committed, nor imagined. Well is this saying confirmed by the unhappy death of the Calabrian prince, at the hands of the Apulian Florisano: who with equal grace and griefe, prosecuted the tenor of his woes thus.

The bitter exclamations that sounded in the Pallace (braue knights) and the hurliburly of the Citie, seemed no lesse, then had it bene round begirt



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

begirt with enemies. Dead as he was, he was carried to the Lady, so she gaue in charge, for louing him so dearly in his life, she would not in his death forsake him. She did lamentably bewaile ouer the murdered Corpses, when I disguised came thither, for I could not but go and see her, of whose sorrow I had bene the causer. Oh cruell heauens (said the wofull Ladie) with what barbarous immanitie haue you extended your rygorous power on me, more then on any Ladie else? Oh Sad iudge and inhumane wretch, murderer of my soule, may it be there shall want Justice, where such bloodie deedes haue abounded? Ay me vnforsunate Prince, how cruelly in thy tender yeares art thou by an vntimely death persecuted. A thousand times did she sound vpon the deceased Truncke, holding it in her lappe. So extreame were my passions (Syz knights) that to see him in that manner, I almost became iealous, iudging I had fauoured him, by so sheading of his blood, that in death (were it not sencelesse) to enioy so swete a fauour. Considering my great intyer loue, my state for his I would haue chaunged.

By little and little I approached so neare her, that lifting vp her eyes, she met with him that was cause of all her sorrowe: shee supposing it, cried out aloud and saide: Why do you suffer the bloodie murderer with such presumption to appeare thus befoze the murdered? Oh Gods, sufficient strength, did I then desire, sufficiently to be reuenged.

Some of the dead Princes Allyes, did suddainly arise, which forced me without farther regard, to shewe my selfe guiltie of the fact by drawing my weapons. Aboue fortye swords did presently flie about mine eares. The Pillers of the garde (whither I was got following Pollinarda) defended my backe, whereby hauing slaine three or foure, the rest with feare retired, giuing me leaue to returne vnto the place where the Ladie continued her laments.

There I said I would yelde both my selfe and my weapons into the Princesse hand. So ioyfully I resolved to accompany the dead prince, to please the Ladie, and therevpon taking my sword by the point, prostrated on my knees, I said: Most excellent Ladie, if any offence hath bene committed, it hath beene with this, wherewith you may take what reuenge you will on mee, that was the executioner thereof.



### The third Booke of the third Part

Belæue me (heroicke knights) there is no crueltie like to that, kindled within the breast of an angry woman, peremptorily resolved, so she may haue her will, no life she doth respect. She took the sword, and with enraged courage, she offered to execute what I had accounted my happinesse, so she were contented: but her strength fayled her in the execution of the blow, falling after the blade in a traunce, whose point scratching my front, did let forth my blood. And though greater wounds then that I had not felt, yet that I noted, when the Lady returning to her selfe, I spied my deare blood on her face, as the spoyle of her intent. A sufficient marke was that (braue knights) to allwaie the greatest paine.

Millions of thanks gaue I Fortune for it, attributing that hap to her: for being so rare, it could not but proceed from such a blinde distributresse of vnerpected benefits. I had no power to defend me from those that assailed me, being weaponlesse, who had giue me a thousand deaths, much moze one, but that my friend and faithfull Lysander, arrived at the instant, who drawing his sword, approued his friendship to be great, by shielding me from a shamefull death, though not from a rygorous prison, where the King commaunded me that night to be cast in, shewing himselfe to be most exceedingly angry and grieved.

You may easily suppose (worthie Syrs) what I might feele, being in that sort imprisoned, especially, when the next day I was adiudged in the open place to bee beheaded. I did not so much sorowe to be ledde to die, as to depart in my Ladies disgrace. Who moste like an eager Wyger of Hyrcania, stil cryed and yelled out for reuenge.

But it pleased my inconstant chance, (from whence I gather, I was reserued to suffer greater paines) that I should knowe my Taylor, being a knight both gentle and kinde, whom by deserts I had bound to pleasure me: for in former times, I had no lesse saued him then his life, defending it from them that would haue spilt it. Hee much encouraged me: saying, he would for my sake vndertake any perill, being thereto long since indebted.

His kindnesse did much comfort me, although I neuer imagined to steale from prison, for all he would haue set mee at libertie, for I was resolved to die louing her, by that meanes working my Ladies content,



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

sent, that she might see I suffered the deserved punishment, on me inflicted for so displeasing her. I only intreated him, by the amitie and loue I had once shewen him, seeing my death was not to be anoyded, and that I might leaue the world contently, he should procure the deliuerie of a letter from me to my Ladie, for it would be my latest happinesse. He had before that (noble knights) heard mee complaine, and utter my true harts sorow, together with the cause thereof: which made him bid me write, for he would with his owne hand conuey it to hers, and also get me an aunswere. To which courtesie I replied. Had I much more done for you then I haue (Sir knight) this your kind offer is a sufficient satisfaction for the same, binding me anew (ouer and aboue your loue) to procure your content in any thing I may: to effect which desire, oh would I had a long life, that a deed so rare and in such distresse offered and performed, might with sufficient recompence be rewarded.

Thus animated I wrote my letter, whose coppie I haue about mee, the which, though it may seeme troublesome to you, I will read, together with the answere: and then you will say, I haue reason to complaine. He drew his letter, and opening it with a sigh, hee read it thus.

### *Florisianos Letter to Pollinarda.*

**N**OT without fear (most soueraigne Princeesse of *Lucania*) euen at the last moment of my life, do I presume to write, not intreating that I may liue, for that, nor the intiernesse of my Loue to your seruice, will permit it, nor yet can I perswade my selfe it would sort to any good effect, because I am the petitioner: for although it sometimes passed through my pensiue thoughts to demand it, to imploy the same to your content, It presently vanisheth like ayre, with remembrance of the vnhappie successe of your distressed Louers vntimely fall. And although my fault may haue some hope of pardon, beeing committed through the abundance of pure Loue, yet is it crost, because it was against thee, when I only should haue dissembled my paine, and not (procuring to asuage it) increase thine in the highest degree. But I am resolved to die, seeing you and my misfortunes, will haue, and haue ordained it



### The third Booke of the third Part

So, I do not offend, beseeching thee, that with thy leaue, I may intreat to be carried to the place of execution along by thy windowe, for the sight of thy presence, wil much abate my greefe and tertor of so sharpe a death. It shall be a fauour that with content wil license my departure, when this haplesse bodie trodde downe with woes, shal be dispossessed of life. The immortall Gods preserue thine as they can, and he wishes that expects the approaching of the expiring minute of his.

Having done, to the Court did the Taylor (sir knights) high him. He was a man in whom the King and al the Nobilitie reposed much trust: so might he enter vncontrowlde into fair Pollinardas chamber, whom (as he tolde me) he found clad all in mourning, still continuing her laments. By little and litle in their discourses, hee forced her by occasion to demand for me: whereto he replied, I was one that momentarily expected his death, from whom I took this letter, finding it on his Deske, and seeing it was directed to your Highnesse, I heere bying it to be burnt, least it import some further evil. He did so cunningly deliuer it, and skilfully perswade the reading, that she thought him ignorant of the tenor. Shee took and perused it, from whence redounded the proceeding of the greatest crueltie euer heard of. From Medea and Progne hath Pollinarda taken their names of cruell: for her answer, denotes her much moze inhumane, the which I do intreate you to attend, that you may be assured what power a womans rage is of, to execute her will. The contents of her reply be these.

#### *Pollinardas answer to Florisano.*

**C**onfounded was I twixt two extreames by thy Leger, (most bloodie knight, and the cruellest that was euer borne:) the one increased my paine, thinking on thy presumption, and my ignorance in receiuing thy lewd scribled paper, because it came from him that bereaft mee of my life, murdering that unhappie Prince. The other which I account woorse then hell, to be constrained to answer thee: because to dissemble with thy letter, were to giue  
ay me



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

syme to thy boldnesse, with occasion that thou mightest think it pleased me, (by my silence) to graunt thy request, admitting thy least euill, the which my selfe denying it, and adding tenne times more tortures to thy deserued punishment, it would be termed no new crueltie, proceeding from mee so exceedingly wronged and offended. My sight thou hast no need to desire, if it shall any thing auayle for thy content: for hee that spoyled mee of my ioy, hath no reason to demaund any. And since thou murderedst his life that did not merit it, thou hast merited the cruellest death that may be deuised, the which I will hasten to execution. I cannot wish the life, to ende mine : because I doo procure thy death to comforte mee.

He hath reason (noble knights saide the Prince, hauing ended) to pine, to languish, to trauell without ioy and content, that liued to see so kinde a letter as mine, answered with such disdain and rigor. Who hath euer heard of such crueltie as this? I had no tongue to complaine of her, nor power to banne my luckelesse starres. For considering how I did offend her, I thought this course of wrath too little: But I desired (so dearely did I loue Pollinarda) it should bee saide of her, shee had with greatest bountie and noblenesse, forgiven the greatest enemye of her content, and sole spoyler of her ioy, for that had bene a manifest token of selfe-conquest ouer her owne anger, and reuenging thirst, which is the sole glozie aboue all others, to eternize an honourable minde, because it is generally accorded, that to bee a greater triumph obtained ouer our proper selues, then to vanquish either heauen or earth. Onely for this is that Ladie much bound to me, that I neuer desired nor imagined any thing, but to the aduancement of her, hono<sup>r</sup> and fame.

My gentle keeper greatly comforted me, knowing how intierly I loued. He performed an act, the which hauing since (without affection) often deeply wondred with my selfe, yet could I neuer resolue mee of the cause, moze then the motion of a vertuous inclination, to comiserate a haplesse chance. It was, that being thoroughly greeued, to see I

A 1 2



### The third Booke of the third Part

Should the next day be openly beheaded, (against which execution, my deare friend Lycanders intercessions nothing preuailed) that entring my chamber with a courage resolute, he thus spake vnto me. You see (sir knight) what the king hath determined on your affaires, it doth so grieve my very soule, that to saue your life, I would gladly loose mine, and hazard my credit with his Maiestie, wronging his reposed confidence in me, and will giue you libertie through this Tower, for it is impossible you should scape by this Gate, by reason of the strong guard that keepe you. And grieve not thus to discontent your Ladie, for the procelle of time will lessen her concealed sorowe for Agesilaos death, better then yours may now satisfie her reuenge. Let it be so, and by this meanes reserue your life, bee it but to imploy it in louing her: for it is not the part of a noble breast to dispaire of euery thing, but it rather belongs to a couragious minde, to nourish his decaying hopes with bolde confidence.

He so well perswaded me (most famous knights) that I resolved to preserve my life by that sower remedie. And first to comfort him, for the deprivation of his estate, which he willingly did forgo to escape away with me, I tolde him for whom I vnderooke that daunger, discovering my selfe vnto him. It gladdened him, and thereupon hee took off my boltes and Gynes, wherein my aduerse fortune had bound me, and so the night being come, we descended the Tower by a corded ladder, through a window that overlooked the sea coast, where he had provided a well rigged Barke: entring therein a maine, wee lancht from the Cittie of Frossa, not without many sighes & teares from my heart, thinking how much I did displease the Ladie of my life thereby, in that her pleasure consisted on my death.

Three daies did wee navigate with a faire gayle, which made mee thinke, I better fared on the seas, then on the land. The second time would not fortune let me repeate it, for conspiring with Eolus, they both would needs trie their fiercenesse on my patience, with the cruellest storme that hath been seen: for the waues beginning to swell, threatening the heauens and strongest rockes, what might not we feare, that were tossed on their billowes, sometimes hoysed to the cloudes, and then cast lower then the center of the earth: So that he which suffered lesse paine, was glad to submit to deaths stroke. Such and so many fashes of water came tumbling into our weather-beaten vessel, that  
full



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

full against our willes, wee were forced to taste the sauer of Neprunes  
saultest licquor.

On the sudden we were surprized with such a whirlewinde, that we  
lost all hope of recovery, for the persecuted Barke laie wallowed by and  
downe, aboue halfe an houre, vntil a contrary winde ouermaistring  
the tempest, cast it neare the shore, and running on a shole, it splitted  
in the midst. Our clamors and shrikes then, are not to be belæued, nor  
wil I rehearse them, for my tongue is insufficient. He that by chaunce  
got then any aduantage, was by fastning on some peece of board, a litle  
to prolong his life. It was so hideous darke, that none could see the  
other, nor light any fire could we, for the winde dispearcing it, would  
blow it out. Thus graped on a planke, I left my friend, and waisting  
with the seas, fortune, and death: the Gods permitted me (yet I know  
not why) to saue my abhorred life. And about the dawning of the day,  
I found my selfe on the sandie Hauen of Argier, so bruised and tired,  
that I could not stand on my feete, for besides my toyles, I had not slept  
in foure daies befoze, still by moments expecting my neare approaching  
death.

I was willing to take a nappe, befoze I would go into the coun-  
trie, so stepping among some growing weedes, I slept a good while, re-  
ceiuing a litle rest and ease. Quickly was it bereaft mee, falling in  
the hands of those barbarous Infidels of that Sconse, that neither pitie  
nor pardon any, though they bee of their owne sect, so much they  
trust to the strength of that their Cattle. They carried me vnto a rich  
Turke, Lieftenant of the Fortresse, who bought me for two hundred  
Chequins, to serue him with his other slaues. I imployed the utmost  
of my power therein, which redounded to such effect, that hee trusted  
me aboue all his other seruitors. My painfull, diligent, and carefull  
service, came to the kings hearing, that he would needs haue me from  
his Lieftenant, paying the double that my first Maister had done for  
me.

I will omit (valiant Princes) how I might græue to be so hur-  
ried from Market to Market to be solde. It pleased my fortune to let  
me so farre obtaine the kings grace, as that hee let mee go at libertie  
without bands, but marked in the front as his slaue. I learned to speak  
the language, which much auayled me, would I haue violated my  
saith consecrated to my Ladie, for Troyla his daughter did euen dots



### The third Booke of the third Part

on me: but to him that had bowled his soule to Pollinardas excellencies, and wanting the consolation of her presence, that increased his torment.

I purpose to shunne her importunities, once of so many times, they had iniustly bought and solde me to runne away. One night among the rest, I resolved to do it, the which I might easily accomplish, considering the much libertie I had: yet would I not do it without a farewell of the beauteous Troyla, because I would not seeme ungratefull for her loue and fauors. You may imagine how she might take it, affecting me (in my opinion) as her selfe: neuerthelesse, her true loue teares could not stay pwe distressed Iaroe, so was I called by the Turkes. Shee seeing me thus obstinately determined, requested to know who I was, then which shee required no other comfort: I did not hazard much thereby, and therefore satisfied her. It somewhat quieted her, protesting to come to my kingdome, or neuer to receiue husband, but at my hands. Whereupon I tooke my leaue, a thousand times embraced by her, for I durst not do it, fearing thereby to wrong her, that is the load-starre of my ioyes.

Shee gaue me more necessities for my iourney then I needed, and therewith departed from Argier, where I nothing got, but like a slave to be marked in the forehead. I could not rest, so tormented was I with variable cogitations, yet in the end I resolved to returne into Lucania, sure to be knowne of none, for that my cares, and the troubles of the seas, had impaired and altered my countenance, as also my slaves marke.

And considering how long since I was yoked and captinated with Loues slauerie, I nothing grieued at the signes thereof: for accounting them giuen me as by Pollinardas hands, I did therein repute my selfe most happie. In these tempestuous toyles, and turbulent shipwacks, spent I one yeare and an halfe, which was too much to be forgot, though not in my Ladies Ballace. I thought that Fortune (by ayding me with prosperous gales) would now at length seeme to pittie me, for in fewe daies I arriued in Lucania, where I inquired how matters passed.

I was informed, that one of the strongest knights now knowne (the Greeke Princes that admit no comparatiue, excepted) was thi,  
ther



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

ther come. The deceased Princes younger brother he was: but farre valianter: for there is no Gyant able to withstand him. He solicited and wooed by all means to obtain the Ladies good will, knowing there past no more betwene her and his brother, then an exterior affection confirmed with espoused faith. Yet doth he insist therein, haughtie and proude is Asternio the fierce, so is he named. Many times was I about to buy horse and armor, to trie my fortune, which is vnable to suffer any Competitor in my loue and hopes. But I let it alone, to see to what end my slavish turkish habit would sort vnto. Sometimes I beheld her, which was no small redresse to my afflicted minde, yet was it tempered, seeing her disconted, which pure loue made me thinke was for Agelao.

So one day walking neare her chamber window, I met with my friend the Prince Lyfander. Euen from his secret cabinet, did my heart leape with his suddaine sight. He stayed to looke on mee, and seeing me attired like a Turke, with a turbant on my head, and the rest of my apparrell neate and cleane, he demaunded whence I was. I answered of Carthage, and that by great good happe I had freed my selfe from Argiers bondage.

He intreated me (I know not if through affection) to become his servant. I agreede thereto, onely againe to trie my fortune that way. Thence wee went to the Pallace, where he acquainted his new seruitor with his Parents. My Lady was present, whose presence made euery ioynt & vaine tremble within me, in their seuerall motion, yet now and then casting my eyes vnto the Sunne-shine of her beautie, I drew strength from it, to support my weake minde, to make reply to their demaunds: for seeing me so young, in that no hayre yet budded in my face, they comiserated the relation of my troubles, imprisonments, and slauieries: yet this nothing greued me (saide I) for I cannot remember when I was mine owne, and therefore supposing I was marked to no other freedome, I did till now patiently beare my slavish bondage, as if I had beere bozne thereto, and I beleue it will neuer bee otherwise, my fortunes so continued it.

Gladly would I haue had my Lady vnderstood it, (so shee might not knowe me) and with what affection I did vter it, as hee that



### The third Booke of the third Part

so long since was wholly deuoted to her perfections. There was none in all the Court but tooke liking in me, especially my Lord Lyfander, that fauored me that night to take mee with him, with swords & bucklers, and priuie coates, secretly to walke abroad, crossing the backside of a Card that leaded him to his Ladie Solesias lodging. His kindnesse and familiaritie was a meanes that hee did not intreate mee as a seruant, but as if he had knowne me, making mee the Secretarie of his Loues, the surest token of true amitie that may bee in this age. I cannot otherwise beleue, but that Cupid now at length thought himselfe wronged, seeing Pollinarda so rebellious and cruell towarde him and me. So she that could not loue Florisiano, Venus sonne with his almightie power, forced to affect poore Iaroe, which name I would not change, for vnder that title Fortune had offered me, in obtaining the grace of Troyla Princesse of Argier.

Quickly did Pollinarda expresse manifest tokens of her change, demanding me whether I needed ought, if yea, my Demaund should be the effect of my desire. Neither was I able to answer, nor did I ever make known Florisianos great necessities: but rather perceiuing what she ment, as one skillfull in the Art, I seemed straunge and regardlesse of her offer, to be moze assured of her faith, that after no occasion might frustrate our expects. My straungenesse effected what I wished, for by this, Iaroes Loue had made her moze solicit. I doubted not thereof, noting the wowing motions of her eyes. Oh, they be the swaete silent Ambassadors, solliciting the soules want.

Many times would I set my selfe at a window, to ruminate alone the felicitie of my state: then would I say to my selfe: Oh, who might deale some of my abounding fauours with discontented Florisiano? Oh Gods, how enuious became the Prince of Apulia, to see Iaroe so beloved, and himselfe bitterly abhorred. Oftentimes recounting my many fauours, I found them so infinit, that I was contented to let the Prince share with Iaroes glozie and happinesse.

One night, (oh happie night among the rest) did the Lady at full make knowne her beheement passions, for I being by my maister commanded to watch till one of the clocke, because wee should then walke abroad, I got me in that season not farre from her chamber. I thinke there was some false doore, for when I was giuing thanks to Cupid for the benefits I receiued, I heard some bussing there. I started some  
what



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

what amazed: and looking what it might be, I sawe her that now governes my heart, appeare moze fairer then Diana. A siluer Candlestick with a Taper she held in her hand. With cap in hand (for she was my Emperesse) I ran to take it from her. Oh loue, to none but whom thou list thou dost distribute thy fauours. She plainly (excellent knights) shewed her selfe to be soly mine: for wanting the power to moue the Organs of her voyce, yet her eyes firmly fixed on mine, she would not let the candlestick go. Oh Loues swæte warre! In faith (Noble Sirs) you would haue smiled to see the bewtious Pollinarda by silence and dumme action, confesse she did loue, acknowledging his soueraigntie, and her tributarie dutie to his deitie, granting those fauours as hostage of her faith, vnto his seruant Iaroc. Oh do not suffer him (most sacred Lady, said I) so much to offend, that was onely created to adore you.

With this speech, she perceiued the fault she had committed: whereupon with consent we set the Taper on the table, while she replied. The imagination (Iaroc) thou mightest ill suspect, of this my coming thus to visit thee, hath bereft me of all strength and vnderstanding: but that thou mayest knowe wherefore I come, it is thus: I must haue thee tell me thy proper name, for I am sure thou hast some other. This will I not be denied, bowing to keepe it secret, that thou mayest receiue no harme therfore. You may well thinke how I might stand confounded with her demand: aunswere I could not, which made her moze eager to know it. Againe, she vrged me, that I was inforced to say, I cannot conceiue (diuine Princesse) why you are importunate to know the thing that will most of all others græue you: oh let me not be the cause to renew your sorrow, for I will first be my own murtherer.

The amorous Dame replied: Did I imagine to receiue any, I would not demand it: but doing so, I assure you, you shall not in any thing moze content me, then in that. I aunswere her thus. Well, for all this, I am sure (faire Princesse) the knowledge of my name will bere you. Wherefore I humbly intreate you to holde this dagger in your hand, that ending my speech, you also end poze Iarocs life. Know therfore (soueraigne Pollinarda) I was borne as I said in Carthage, but am called Florisiano: I chaged it, because I heard, that in times past one of this name had exceedingly displeased you, by slaying the Prince



### The third Booke of the third Part

of Calabria: wherefoze, seeing how hated that name was in this house, I durst not come hither with it, fearing to refresh therewith, the memorie of passed græfes. Oh exceeding power of loue, for though (Sir Knights) I remembred the things she did most loue and hate, she shew-  
ed no whit of alteration, but returning my ponyard, said,

Little need had you Florisiano, to alter your name for any such feare, knowing that onely for it, the first of the same had bene forgiven. Farther shee did not proceede, nor more openly bewray her affection.

I dissembled my ioy, sharing it with Iaroe, whom now me thought began to bee forgot: I would therein recompence him for his former kindnesse towards Florisiano. The time would no longer permit vs to chat, for the houre of my departure being come, I was constrained to tell her so. She was content, aduising me to be secret, because shee would that way often visit me.

I imagine (Sir Knights) that you thinke both tongue and soule swore a solemne performance of her deare commaund, and if you so thinke, I assure you, your thoughts deceiue you not: for my soule that still hanged vpon her lips, receiued her command, with no lesse sentēce of the Delphian Oracle: then rising, with a pleasant smiling she said: I pray Lord Florisiano, let vs entreate your Turkeship, Chzistianly to conduct vs to our lodging, and then wéele license your departure. All rauished with ioy, not able to speake a word, I went with her to her chamber doze: and then falling on my knees and kissing her hand, desiring her to account me hers: I toke my leaue, leauing my soule in her bosome, and returned to my Lords lodging: where we prepared our selues for our walke.

He did an act, that I iudged most kinde, for he gaue me a garment that had bene mine, saying: Hold Iaroe, for since Fortune robbed mee of his owner, none hath better deserued it. I put it on, and greatly wondered how he knew me not.

Alway we went, arriuing to the window where his Lady expected him: I stayed to garde the passage, with such resolution, that all the world, yea Florisiano of Apulia, had not passed there: with the first, and with the fauoured last, was Iaroe now in disgrace, seeing the alteration of his fortunes.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

So if with patience you will attend me, the next Chapter shall unfold what else happened

### CHAP. XXIX.

How the Prince of *Apulia* ended the discourse of his amorous life to the Greeke Princes, and how *Claridiano* pitying his estate, departed with him.



What strong residue the power of Loves affection hath within an amorous breast (faire Ladies) the beauteous Pollinardas suddain and vnerpected change (which Agefilao bought full dearly) doth amply shew: for not remembryng how greatly she had loued him, how bitterly she had taken his death, and with what rigor she procured his reuenge, she recanted, and without consideration of her honours blemish, doted on a slaue. A iust guerdon, that seeing she would not affect the knight, that with such firme proofes had approued himselfe to be hers, and by his deeds, worthy of her estimate, she now beheld the subiect of her ioyes, with slauish markes, and that her blinde and vaine passion, might so far exceed as to say, that for the second Florisianos sake, the first had bene pardoned.

There is none that may safely build his assurance on such effects, if once he haue opened his doores to Loves flatteries. In pensiue imaginations had the Louer put the Grækes with his amorous Historie, that they would not so soone haue it end. But the youth that aggrauated his woes with repetition of his former græses, abreuiated, saying.

There stayed I (Versicke knights) gazing on the besture that belonged to the Apulian, till that my Lord Lyfander hauing excused himselfe to his lady, of certaine obiections layd against him, I thinke it was but some iealous imagination, they would assure all inconueniences, by an espousall contraction, especially befitting them both. So hee came for me to be a witnesse thereto, but ere he discovered himselfe, he would needs try the bygones of my armes, comming an other way disguised for the purpose: and being neare me, he drew, saying.



### The third Booke of the third Part

What madnesse hath brought thee to so suspicious a place, where thy bolonelle shall reape no other againe, then a remozcelesse death? I was so carefull to let none passe, noz to disclose who I was, that without more ado, oz other answer, I set vpon my dearest friend. In faith I reioyced to see how wel he behaued himselfe, although I knew him not, but I being thzoughly incensed, I began to follow him in such sort, that I dzone him among the hedges of the Dyche, faithfully discharging my dutie.

It behoued him to speake, least some danger had happened, so he rayled his voice, miscalling me therewith, which more grieued me, then if he had mortally wounded me: for seeing me with eager furie, presse to take aduantage at full to hit him, he said. Oh Turkish dog, what doest thou? I knew my Lord Lyfanders voyce, and beleue me (Po- ble warriors) I was neuer more vexed: but that I tendered him as my soule, I aore had surely kept him from enioying his loues, yet I stayed my hand, considering his friendship towards the Prince of A- pulia.

So I tooke my sword by the poynt, and intreated him to pardon me, for my not knowing him, had forced mee to commit that fault. The faith (answered he) wherewith (friend I aroe) thou backest thy Maister, bzings with it thy excuse, for neuer had any knight a better seruant the I: But that thou mayest know how I esteeme thee, come, for I will haue thee be a witnesse to the faith I will plight vnto Solecia, to bee her firme Louer.

Hee bounde mee eternally by the act: And the Moone then shyning bright, it shyned iust in the middest of the Ladies windowe where she stayed: and credit mee, shee seemed be wotifull. Shee had so affected Florisiano Prince of Apulia, that seeing mee with his owne garments, shee could not but pittie him, calling mee to me- mozie.

With my hatte in hand (as a seruant ought) I stood still, but she called me, saying. Come thee hither friend I aroe, for I will haue this assurance passe in thy presence, and my ioyes should I account compleate, were the owner of thy apparell in thy place.

Oh, if that were so, my deare espouse (sayde my tender- hearted freende) what greater content could wee more de- sire.

Towards



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

Towards whom might the blinde Goddesse shewe her selfe moze favourable then to vs, had she now sent vs that valiant knight, cross with so many troubles: Some teares did I espie in their eyes, which so greatly moued me, that I could no longer dissemble, and going moze neare them, I thus spake: My very soule would ioy (most soueraigne Princes) although I lost this good, to see that knight here, who is the happiest in the worlde to be beloued of such Princes: for then should fortune neither bereaue Iaroe of this content, (oh Gods I could scarce make an end) no: yet should the despairing knight be so persecuted by her, as not to enioy your happie presence, & by experience see, with what faith he is affected. And if you regard him, behold me here, for moze troubles yet reserued: And since I am eye witnesse of the strongest and purest amitie that can be, oh let the knight in yealousie satisfie it with the like, and with endlesse seruice perpetually to hono: you. And wonder not to see me thus attired, for the successes that haue me befallen, makes me admire how I haue escaped with life. I wil not (because I cannot sufficiently) expresse (excellent knights) the ioy those Princes conceived with my sight. They imbraced me as I were their brother, yet had I bene so, they could not haue done moze.

They plainly had perceiued I was inamoured of Pollinarda, since to such manifest hazard of my life, I durst aduenture to come to the Court. He so richly perfozmed the part of a Noble Prince, that knowing I desired to be concealed, and not to be intreated otherwise then a seruant, he also seemed content that I should affect his sister. Much better did the faire Ladie take my part, saying. Beleue me, hencefo:th none but I wil sollicit Iaroes affaires, which should haue no il successe, seeing he refuseth his other name: so wil I procure to redresse the most difficultest, that we may liue contented.

She forgot it not the next day, going to visit my Lady in her chamber, where she found her troubled with many amorous doubts: now misconstruing of her fauours showane me, then iudging it not sufficient to my deserts, and her loue. We departed thence ouercome with ioy, and being in our Chamber, and the Prince laide in bed, I betooke me to a window that looked into the Garden, to recount the fauours I received: where in brieft I omitted none, singing vnto the silent night, the pleasure of my conceived happinesse, vnable to deuise what means I might chosse to be knowne vnto the Princesse.



### The third Booke of the third Part

She was so farre in loue, and therein so much out of quiet (no Louer had euer any) that she ouerheard my song, and I thinke she gathered thereby, her selfe had only the power to glad my sorrowfull soule. And as the Infant Solesia came afterwards, and began to talke of me, she so well dealt for me, speaking more then I deserued, that she altogether made conquest of her heart for me: insomuch that she had almost discovered it. For that time the Ladie would not presse her any more, which if she had, Pollinarda would of force explaine her great loue towards me.

That night which was the last of my content, she came to heare Musicke, and as I alwaies vsed, I tooke my Lute and went to the window, where (not thinking because it was so late any had heard me) I began to sing, and openly to expresse the soueraigne ioy of my heart, in this manner.

Oh, who would thinke that Bondage could be Free?  
That, deep hart-woundings could beget all gladnes,  
That, most accurst, could the most happiest bee,  
That, that which all count grieffe, should kill all sadnes,  
Let all men note these myracles in mee,  
Whom Loue hath raised from the depth of badnes  
Vnto the highest, of all high degree,  
Euen then, when nothing rul'd my soule; but madnes.

Blest be the heauenly powre, whose powerfull might  
Hath dul'd the keen edge, of her iust disdainings:  
And euer blessed be her noble spirit  
That heard (with pittie) my sad soules complaining:  
Blest be the grieffe of past afflictions night,  
Sith it, more sweete, doth make my present gaining,  
Blest be the *Tyme*, that lent me first her sight,  
But treble blest the *Tyme* of grace obtaining.

You markes of bondage: (too) which did inuest  
Me in these blessings: euer be you blest.

Longer had I made my song, but that I heard a noise, which not onely made me leaue, but also with some alteration to draw my weapons, not



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

not thinking my lifes happinesse would seeke me at that houre. With my sword in one hand, and buckler in the other, I awayted the successe, when in the way accustomed, I espied that soueraigne Ladie, so excellent bewtifull, that with her only sight, I thought my selfe transported into the skies. Smiling she came, shewing the heauen of her face full of ioyfull hopes. She first said thus. Methinkes that straunge, and iresfull kinde of entertainment, for her that soly procures thy content: Oh what swete words: these be they that now seede me in this cruell absence: and more she said thus.

And in faith I haue not conceiued small pleasure hearing thee sing, expressing the secrets of thy amorous heart: and for the great loue the Prince my brother beareth thee, I wil indeuour (if you tel me who your Ladie is) to get your libertie, that you may better attend her seruice.

With my soule full of gladnesse I replied. It is the condition (most soueraigne Ladie) of all powerfull Loue to pardon none, among which number, he hath from the beginning so subdued my heart, that I haue alwaies delighted to treate of his affaires with my selfe, being most alone: although the Ladie I adoze and idolatrize, be resolved neuer to fauour me.

I haue not dared euen from the spring of my loues, to do more then sing the ioy my heart conceiues to account my selfe hers. Where to she answered. And is it possible thou art so cunning in dissembling thy affection? Now by my troth, wert thou to be my gallant, thou shouldest not suffer so many torments. And beleene me, there is neuer any thing lost by discouering to the Ladie the interioz secrets of the heart, and how she is beloued: for otherwise thus to dissemble, is rather occasion of further euil, because it is likely, (nay it often happens) that the Ladie may place her affection on some other, and so thou lose that benefit, through silence.

I haue already set my chiefe happinesse therein (did I reply) most beawteous Ladie, and therefore I cannot but bee silent, and loue, although I die.

Well hath my Ladie vnderstood what I require, and how I loue: for mine eyes sometimes forgetting their other motions, repairing vnto the heauen of that bewtie for some fauour, are credible Embassadors of the hearts intent.

That



### The third Booke of the third Part

That is not sufficient (said she) to make her resolve to loue, beeing beloued: for as touching your gazing, that is so common and generall among all men, that the Ladies may iudge it as an ordinarie thing, not considering the owner of those gazing instruments, both honour and loue her: and therefore it is an error to dissemble, when the paine is estranged. If in recompence of the greatnesse thereof, (most sacred Ladie said I) the author of the same should be discovered, and she acquainted therewith, none with more reason ought to do it then I, for there can be none that hath indured so much, nor any loued with such firmnesse.

If there be assurance thereof (replied the Princesse) I say thou doest wrong thy Ladie, in not letting her know how she is beloued, if it be with such truth as you publish. And therefore because I haue this day heard I know not what of the Princesse Solefia, thou shalt tell me what I demaund, and on my faith none shall know it, but whom thou wilt. You haue no reason to binde me to any thing, (excellent Ladie replied I) knowing I will till death obey your command. Shee answered, Why then we shall not so ill disagree as I thought: the thing therefore I would knowe, is, thou must tell me if thy Lady be heere or no, and her name withall, without delay and circumstance: for I shall thereby receiue the greatest pleasure in the world, and with the contrary, exceeding discontent, which will bee immerited, and no iust guerdon for what I meane to do for thee? You may easily conceiue (valiant knights) what conflicts I might indure of contrarious thoughts, not knowing the successe that might ensue, if by telling troth, I did condescend vnto her demaunde. Somewhat amazed stood I a while, in so much that shee laide: you must not deuise excuses, for it will fall out worse, if you offend me so. I answered. None did I deuise (diuine Pollinarda) but I rather began to incourage my selfe, to passe my life in your disgrace, for nought else can redolue heereby, but kindle your sleeping wrath. Bee it what it will, (saide shee) for I am pleased with the knowledge. Why then (replied I) know (Souveraigne Princesse) shee is in this Cittie, and of the selfe same name that you are of, in which repitition I offend her. Shee proceeded further, saying. And haue you neuer spoken with her: now did I tremble with feare, and then imagined a thousand deuises, yet in the end I replied,

Souveraigne



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

Soueraigne Ladie, your excellency so farre v2geth this matter, that I cannot stepe from hence, fearing to meete with death, vnlesse you seeke his lifes ouerthrow that was bozne to serue you. She replied: I wil haue you tel me all, so: I wil take it as one that procures your good, as you haue partly seene.

Whereto I answered falling on my knees: Presuming on your Royall word and fauours (sacred Ladie) I cannot deny but I am yours, imploring pardon for this fault (if it be any) wor2hie of worse punishment then death. It did not græue her to heare me say she was the Quene my heart had cholen to imperate euer it, and my soule: but rather taking holde by my King (the marke of my slavery) which for my pleasure I often put on, shee raised me, saying: Very plainely hast thou (Florisiano) exp2est thou louest me, and if thy constancie where, with thou doest it, be as thou saiest, so I may enioy a heart so sincere, and second to none, I giue thee leaue to do so stil, regarding the secrecy due to my honoz, vntil the heauens shall minister those meanes where, with I may allwage thy griefes. I required her hands, I could do no lesse, to kisse them) moze glad, then had I bene inuested sole Emperoz of the wide world, and yet that had not so pleased me. She commanded me to take off my King, seeing Fortune had now fauoured me, wher, to I replied: Oh let not your excellency commaund me to put off that thing wherewith the heauens haue begun to worke my ioy, lest Fortune enemy to all content, seeing me no moze a slaue, should triumph ouer my glozy: And though I be a king in louing, and the most glori- ous and free in being beloued, let me keepe this as a memoriall: I am and wil be yours while my life shall endure, the which losing it in your seruice, will be the happiest and richest losse in this terrene Wybe. If it be so, weare it (replied the Distresse of my life) and yet the taking it off, should nothing impaire my affection, which now is only imployed in your Loue.

Thus was the Soueraigne of my soule, weauing this swæte webbe of my life, on the delicate Lome of both our contents, when blinde Fortune Distresse of mischaunce, being weary and angry that she had helped me that litle moment of time, brought it about I know not by what meanes, that our Loues till then became suspicious in Court, nay further proceeds my woes, (Oh I cannot without teares say moze) it came to the Kings eares: who desirous to be assured of



### The third Booke of the third Part

so dishonourable a deede, as to be beloved of the Princeſſe, he had hidde himſelfe in that roome unknowne to me that very night: and ſeeing by experience what he had ſuſpected, he iſſued forth enraged like a mad mā. I yet was on my knees, when he came forth, and finding me in that manner, he tooke me by the colloz, and drawing my poniard, ſaid: Oh infamous miſcreant, Turkiſh dogge, haſt thou thus wronged the truſt reposed in thee? The puniſhment inflicted on thee, ſhall bee a ſufficient example to all others ſuch diſloyall wretches as thy owne ſelfe. I had no eyes to looke him in the face, nor tongue to anſwere him, though I wanted not hands to ſhead his blood, had not my Ladyes and my friend Lyſanders diſpleaſure and diſcontent thereby ſtayed me. Hee ſnatched at her ſo furioſly, that ſhee almoſt fell vpon her face, ſaying.

I had not thought (Minion) thy wanton boldneſſe would ſo haue made thee paſſe the limits of ſhame and grace, as to beſtow thy affection on a ſlaue? He cried to thoſe that awaited without, whereat foure knights ruſhed in, who ſtraight conueied me to priſon, where I thought they would cloſely murther me: the which I had gladly receiued, ſo ſhee were not hardly handled, that had ſo bountifully fauoured mee. The king did commit her, but knowing our affection had bene no other then he had ſeene, hee ſtraight (for hee loued her dearly) forgane her, turning all his rage vpon poore Floriſiano. Oh, magnanimous knights, with how many millions of briniſh teares did I bewaile that loſſe? it was beleeue me the greateſt in the world, for none in ſo ſhort time could bee ſo happie as I, nor none againe ſo unhappie. Nothing I did, but exclaime lamenting, and with woes tormenting my afflicted ſelfe.

At length, being ſo many, ſome pierced the high heauens, moving the immortall Gods to pittie and comiſeration, appointing a meanes on earth to redæme me: for the Noble Lyſander being moued at my diſgrace, by pollicy procured my Sailors to releaſe me of my Irons and boltes, that I might eſcape through a window, and ſaue my life.

I greeued no leſſe to depart from Pollinarda, at that time (though in her grace and ſauour) then at firſt when like an enimie I ran from her. Yea more then this did my friend ſollicit in my behalfe: for hee went to his ſiſter, and diſcouered to her the whole ſecret of my affaires, telling



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

telling her , I was the knight in yealow , and hee that slewe her Agefilao , then louing her moze then now . I neuer would tell any who else I was, because I bowed it from the beginning, onely to procure her fauour or disfauour, without that regard and respect wherein I might bee hadde , beeing knowne to bee Prince of Apulia, and had not your valour and curtesies bound me thereto, none should haue knowen it.

The Lady did not gréue at this swéte complot of Loue, but rather it kindled in her some new affection. So was I visited in prison from her : which reuiued my hopes , and added new life to my dying powers. To pleasure the Prince Lyfander, my Gaylozs tooke from me my gyues.

The Lady Distresse of my life, knew the night of my departure, and hauing sometimes befoze witten vnto me by her brother, yet then she exprest the vtmost of her Loue : for I was no soner downe in the Garden ouer which the windowe was that I leaped thzough, when among a certaine company of trées I heard a noyse. Supposing it could be none that would do me such pleasure as I after receiued , I drew my weapons and went towards that place, where I was quickly pacified, seeing a knight I well knew : who with as much breuetie as the case required, tolde me, that my Lady sent me a Letter with money and Jewels for my escape.

I tooke all , not knowing how to deserue so much good as at her hands I had receiued : and making my answere according to the merits of those deeds, I tooke my leaue of the knight and went out of the Garden, and trauelled till I thought I was out of daunger , and hiding my selfe among certaine steepie Mountaines, I vnripped the Letters seale, and by the clearenesse of the Moone, that then shyned, I read it thus.



## The third Booke of the third Part

### *Pollinardas Letter.*

**T**He greefe ( kinde *Florifiano* ) to see thee so depart from her that had lodged thee in her brest , is so great , that it will not suffer me to be tedious, although it bee my onely desire : for seeing that going from mine with such affection, it must rest in thy hands: it were some comfort to me, thus with thee to prattle longer. But aye me, for *Fortune* thinking we shuld enioy too great a happinesse thereby , she doth bereaue me of my iudiciall senses and my breath, yet not so much, but I haue strength to say (though not libertie) to auerre, that *I* remaine thine till death : which shall first attach me with his grim pawes, then *I* will grant an other (yea) vnlesse it be to him that hath long since with such zeale and constant loue , obtained and wonne my firme faith. The Gods preserue thee me, as they know I wish, and thou deseruest.

Thine till death,  
*Pollinarda.*

This Letter is it (braue warriors) that comforts me , when my greefe is at greatest, and this is the soode vnto my fainting life, whose tedious relation, *I* am sure hath wearied you.

Wherto *Claridiano* said: This knight and my selfe (Noble Prince) haue taken such pleasure at your Loues discourse, that it cannot bee expressed : insomuch, it hath bound me to offer my life in your behalfe, so *I* protest, neuer to put on Armour more, if *I* deliuer not that Lady into your hands , in spight of all the world : wherefore let vs straight bee gone, although it grieues my very soule to leaue this knight : but your necessitie forceth me thereto , because her father to bee rid of that care, may marrie her to the brother of the deceased Prince.

What onely is the thing which most tormenteth me (answered the *Apulian*) so doubtlesse it may happen as you (Sir knight) haue imagined : and may the heauens recompence what now and hereafter you shall do in my behoose : and *I* much desire to know who you are, that *I* may venture with more securitie : so all helpes will be necessarie to cope with so puissant a king, and a knight so strong as *Astrenio*.



## of the Myrrour of Knighthood.

By the way you shall know that (said the hasty Greeke) for danger now awaites on our delay. He tooke his leaue of his vncle with more loue, then when Perseus parted from Theseus: he promised to seeke him, if matters succeeded to his content.

They all rose, the Greeke Prince with Florisiano, hasted to their ship, wherein being imbarcked, they launched into the deepe Ocean, where we must leaue them, to bring Claramants to Constantinople.

### CHAP. XXX.

What happened in the prooue of the Disamorous Tower: and how Claramant arriued, and prooued it.



With feare to bee condemned of too much prolixitie, in the amorous discourse of the Prince of Apulias life, being the thing I most dread, and onely seeke to shunne: and yet no small trouble did it cost mee to refuse it, to so brieue a summarie as I haue the which I vze for my excuse, although it need not, if it be read by Cupids vassalles: but whilst this is in question, attend (fairest of all faires) & most beauteous Ladies, for the triall of the Tower is nothing but Loue. There was none left, but went forth to see it, because the same therof drew them thither. So many knights came from the shippes, that the Cittie was not able to containe them all, and euery one so richly armed, that it delighted euery beholder. The spacious yard was in a trice filled with people: and the Ladies with their beauties, made it more glorious then the heavenly Synode of the Gods. For the trial, there wanted no knights, in that ere none, about two hundred shields accompanied the others that were before hung vp, yet none arriued so high as Brandimardo, (sonne to the great Africano) that died vpon the conquest of Lyra, in Rosiclers presence, as was declared in the second part of this Historie. As the Emperours were about to withdraw to dinner, there entred the place, attended on with a maiesticke compaignie, a cousin of Abstrusios, no lesse valiant then he. All in green armour hee was clad, brauely garnished with haire of Bownes: the deuise on his shield was a Griffion without head, which in his countrie in battell



### The third Booke of the third Part

he had slaine. As nimble as a Koe he dismounted, ascending the staires in such haste, that euery one thought he would end the aduenture: but arriuing where the deceased Pagan had done, hee was charged with so many strong blowes, that Galtenor saith he could do no moze, then raise one legge to steppe higher, which was the cause that with moze rigour hee was thrust out, and his shield placed according to his deserts, next to Brandimardos. Great hono<sup>r</sup> wonne Salberno hereby, (so was he named) and had in high estimation, for (his Cousin excepted, that was bozne for the seas, whose Lieftenant hee was) none could better order a Pauall battel then he, as he shewed it in the warres of Grecia. The Emperour to fauor the Captaine generall of his Fleetes, inuited him, which they much esteemed, iudging the Greeke Monarch the absolute<sup>st</sup> accomplished in all vertues, of any in the whole vniuerse besides: and themselves most happie, to bee ioyned in amitie with such Princes.

Alway they would go, when a kinsman of Pollidolpho of Croatia shewed himselfe, whose armes were of an Indian colour full of strawberries. With gallant brauerie hee went towards the Tower, where hee spedde not so ill, as not to be accounted valiant, for his shield was hung next to the Trojan Oristides. To dinner went the Emperours, glad to see what happened in that triall, where they were serued with such maiestie as their estates required. By themselves sate all the Ladies so exceeding faire, that Paris had doubted to which for beautie hee might giue the golden apple. Nothing could please the beauteous Archysilora, in absence of her Greeke, but rather grieued to see those seasonals, missing the presence of her Prince. She was a thousand times determined to go and seeke him: but shee left it, supposing the fame of the disamorous Tower would draw him thither, thinking that was he that accompanied the knight of the Lyons, so much shee iudged him to resemble Claridiano.

Great comfort was it to her to communicate her grieffe with Rosamond, that incouraged her as one that was free of such tormenting passions, and yet soze grieued for the want of her deare sonne Roselindo, of whom she knew not what was become, and many times shee was about to demaunde the wise men for him, had shee not thought it too much immodestie.

Shee



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

She could not but reueale it to her beloued Dacian, who dissembled it as much as he could, yet not without signes of inward sorrow in his very soule: he purposed to seeke him, first inquiring of his friend Nabato, the place of his abode, the which animated him, perswading himselfe hee would haue especiall care of his welfare, beeing the thing that so neare concerned him.

Dinner being ended, and the table taken vp, all that companie of Emperors, Kings, Princes, and Knights, with all the Ladies, came forth to see the new comers, that were many, to proue the Tower. It was worthie the trauell, and to be desired, what was promised to the victor. Wherefore scarce were the Ladies placed, when with Princely grace there entred the stout Lastorus, cousin to Don Silueis, and Generall to the Hungarians, and of whom there was good hope. He shewed himselfe to be no lesse vnbeloued then valiant, for his shield was set next to the Trojans.

So many hastened to the triall, that no sooner one ended, but another was readie. Among them that best behaved themselves, was the gallant Lusitanian, Archylous, Don Silueis brother, whose shield was also equalled with the last. In such multitudes were those shields hung vp, that the Christaline Tower was almost full. Euerie one conuerted their eyes at one side of the place, because they had espyed the famous Oristoldo Lord generall by land, to whom the Emperour had given that honorable charge, in respect of what his father had done for his son, and he for his Nephew. It was aduisedly done by the Greeke, for the world did neuer knowe a better, nor more fortunate Captaine, or more skilfuller in ordering of battel, and presenting it in time. He was beloued of all, and also of the Ladies, although he had not shewne himselfe amorous: for he said, there was nothing more contrarie nor troublesome to him that swayed any publicke commaunde, then to bee in loue, and to bee so, it was necessarie for a man to busie himselfe in nothing but in that new alienation, setting apart all other cares. Accompanied with most of the Nobilitie came the valiant youth, all in white armor, garnished with knots of Gold and Azure. A gallanter knight had not bene seene in that triall. Mounted he was on a Roane Courser, with Caparisons of colour like his armes, with so many stones, that their light dazeled the splendor of the Sunne, whose rayes reuerberating on them, depriued the beholders sight.



### The third Booke of the third Part

On his head and his otone Burgonet, great plumes of feathers, full of spangles of golde. In middest of his shield within a groue of trees, hee himselfe was pictured with his hand vnder his chéeke, leaning vpon a bloodie launce, at his fete lay the God of Loue with bow and arrowes, as vanquished by him : on whom he seemed to gaze so carelesly, as if he held his deitie in naught. The posie was thus, wreathed about his launce.

*Mars and Cupid differ farre,  
Loue cannot agree with warre:  
And till Mars and Loue agree,  
Looke not (Loue) to cōquer me.*

None was more gazed on then the bzaue Prince of Antioche. Oh, how gallant doth he come (saide Lyriano, who greatly tendred him) and I am glad of his libertie, by reason of these Ladies that may well excuse it, for were he in loue, he could not then so well guard vs. I am sorrie (replied Rosiluera) that so free a knight should haue any here to take his part, for I knowe not how so great a wrong as hee commits against Ladies by that cruell deuile, may bee satisfied, but by wishing the thzaldome of his libertie. If the world had another Oristoldo (answered the Princesse) it were good that this were in loue, and the other the care to keepe vs. Leauē we this (saide Rosamond) to see what will become of his libertie.

By this he was arrived at the Tower, where hee allighted, and drawing forth his sword, mounted the staires with such courage, that euery one cried out : Lindabrides would be his. One steppe he ascended higher then Brandimardo. Where he stayed, for hee was charged with so many blowes, that hee spedde worse then any befoze, although his honour were greater. His mother and the Princeses that loued him as their sonne, made him come where they were, and there the Ladies did disarmē him with such kindnesse, as if he were one of the Greeke Princes. To whom Lyriana saide. I am sorrie (Prince Oristoldo) that to shew vs your libertie, to these Ladies grēfes, you haue sustained



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

sustained such trouble. He answered. Pleasant is the solwest (most soueraigne Princesse) if my will and desire bee considered, although the devise be against my selfe, the which shall neuer keepe me from being yours. Now you haue lost the entrance (said Artemisa) you shew your selfe penitent and sozrie for your libertie, but you shal not thinke to haue answered it with such small satisfaction. The beautie of these two Ladies had something astonished the free Prince: yet hee replied. You shal not need to devise new punishments for him, that must & will be alwaies obedient to your commaunds (faire Ladies) and let it be y<sup>e</sup> nough, I confesse I haue wronged you, that this acknowledgement may strengthen my excuse, and so lessen my fault, that by purchasing your grace, I may hope for an extenuation of my chastisement. What might be (said Rosilura) were not your offence greater then may bee forgiven.

No more of this vnprofitable chat (spake Archyrosa) for his libertie will sufficiently hereafter plague him, as it hath done many others: and let vs now inquire the reason of this tumult: whereat they all looked to see what it was. There was none but said aloud. The aduventure is at an end, now the braue knight of the Lyons is come. All the Princes turned to see his comming, especially Rosabell, beeing so greatly bound vnto him. What shall I say of Archysilora Queene of Lyra: the changing colours of her face deuoted her alteration, thinking her Prince came with him. Alreadie was this warlike Mars past the pzease of people, mounted on a mightie bay Courser, whose Caparisons coloured like his armoz, were imbodered with so many inestimable stones, that the riches of them admired the spectators. On the toppe of his helme and horses head, were large plumes of diuers coloured feathers, that the brauerie of both amazed the whole place, that none doubted his victorie. The Empero<sup>r</sup> Alphebo, was he that most reioyced, because he had and did greatly loue that Princesse, whom he so easily could not forget, if she had not beene allotted to his brother. In midst of whose shield, was drawne a world round like a globe, by which a knight climed vp, to the toppe whereof he wanted litle, where on late Fortune, reaching him her hand, with this motto.



## The third Booke of the third Part

If *Fortunes* hand be not a stop,  
I will attaine the highest top,  
The which, if *Fortune* do deny,  
*Fortune* is too blame; not I.

No lesse pleasure was conceiued at the word then the knights gallant disposition: who with admiued *Paiesie* past on, making his horse bend to the earth befoze the Ladies. It amazed him to see such diuine beutie: he stood a good a good while rapt in contemplation: indging it the rarest sight in the world: and indeede he was not deceiued, for so many and so faire were neuer seene together, but there.

I would be loth (saide the *Princesse Oliuia*) the knight of the Lyons should detract much time in gazing on our beauties, so that when he would not, he be forced to lose the forbidden entrance, not for want of valour, but by his yeelding to loue.

There is none heere but wishes his good in all things (spake the *Quene of Lyra*) for by his meanes we were all made ioyfull. Oh, let mee keepe company with such happie knights (saide *Artemisa*) whose disdain towards Ladies, nor their coming against them so openly to approue themselves their aduersaries, in *Venus* lawes, will not diuert their affection from them.

The desire they haue to become Louers (answered the *Empresse Claridiana*) helpes them to be beloued: but let vs not not lose the sight of his high deeds: for I haue great hope of his victorie. There is none here but hath the like, wishing it with their very soules (replied *Lyriana*) and thereupon I doubt not but he should finde some one heere that would undertake the combat about the lame.

By this the furious youth was arrived at the Tower gate, where he dismounted, and stucke his launce in the ground, whereat hee tyed his horse with such beauerie, that euery one applauded his behaviour.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

His shield hee tied to his saddle pummell, and taking his Are, with soueraigne grace he paced towards the entrance, whose passage many iudged too small, considering his fearefull aspect. For raising aloft his mightie are, making the blade shine with her glittering brightnesse, and he being one of the best proportioned knights on the earth (so he were no Gyant) for he was nine foot in height, and of most strong and even composed members, all which were apparant tokens of his excessive strength.

Scarce did hee beginne to moue to enter the Tower, when there was heard the horrible sound of new warlike instruments, with such cries and clamors of people, that it seemed a whole hoste was within.

Upon the toppe of the Tower appeared squadrons of armed knights, whence also were discharged infinit peeces of Ordnance. Many hideous thrikes, gaue warning that the fierce scourge of their house was come.

This is no impediment to forbid his mounting the staires, for as if hee walked on the plaine ground, he ascended them to the very top, whence new cries rezounded, and new keepers were sene to defend him from taking the key of the Tower. A good while he laboured in this rigorous conflict: in the end, settling himselfe strongly on his fete, hee pass his are into his left hand, and with his right hee got the key, wherewith hee opened the Tower gate, whereat a new alarum was sounded, which put the battel in some doubt. For foure ugly deformed Gyants were placed at the dooze, in defence whereof they executed wonders, hauing no other care but to prohibit the entrance. Oh who would not delight to see our warlike youth, within the narrownesse of the gate, take the are by the middle, wherewith he misses no blowe, and that which he executeth, daunts the place with chill cold feare, but not those that were onely set there to receiue them, though the God of battels had discharged them, yet could they not bee greater then these. Not without great labour and toyle hee thrust himselfe among them, where his deeds were admirable: yet he toyled in vaine, for vnlesse hee cleaned their heads, hee cannot free himselfe from them, because therein consisted all their strength.

But now Fortune was of his side, and content that beauteous



### The third Booke of the third Part

Princesse should be set at libertie, and end so many her troubles, by enjoying him, the heauens had so long since promised her: for laboring in this cruell fight, giuing and receiuing mightie blowes, by good chance hee reached one with the blade of his are vpon the head. Hee cleft it downe to the bzeast, thinking hee had cut a rocke, so hard hee found it. At the very instant he vanished out of sight, whereby he supposed their inchauntment lay there.

Wherevpon hee beganne to stretch himselfe at length with his are, as a cunning maister of his weapon. Euery one in the place plainly beheld him, for the walles of the Tower were so transparant, that all was seene, what ere was done in the first Hall. Some alteration did Claridiano fee within her Iuozie bzeast, remembryng what troubles and daungers shee had indured and past, all caused by that Princesse.

And Meridian was also cōfounded in imagination of opposed thoughts, which exceedingly græued him: for if his sister were liberated, his fathers large Emperie should be hers: but so he might see her, hee was content for that time to omit those cogitations, and turned his eyes on the haughtie knight, that representing fire Mars within the Tower, had by this slaine another.

The valiant youth made sure account of the victorie, knowing where their strength lay. So hee extended all his, to end the battell with them, thinking their deaths would ende the enterprize. Hee made as if hee feared them, that they might with vnadvised haste follow him.

It fell out as hee desired, and so fetching about the ingratefull Athenian are, hee discharged it with the vtmost of his furie, on the top of the ones helme, that both it and helme was cleft to the waste.

Hauiing thus done, he determined to close with the last, but ere hee cast his armes about him, hee ranne against him so hard with his shoulders, that hee thrust him from him, with more furie then hee had bene driven by a culuerins shot, and before hee recovered himselfe, the vnresisted are did hit him on the head, doing by it as by the others.



## of the Mirrour of Knighthood.

The Greeke thought he had now ended his businesse, but it happened otherwise: for two knights of gallant disposition, presented themselves before him, without either Armes or weapons, saving Rapiers and Daggers. They issued forth on the sudden, but with the sound of militarie instruments, that gave signall to a new fight.

The one said: Most valiant knight, seeing the happiest imured within this Tower must not be with Armour, which wee willinglier would haue done, the better to eschew your furious blowes: but wee are commaunded the contrarie: and therefore, we are forced, and dare not but obey: wherefore, if you will terminate the battle, and thereby conclude the aduventure, you must presently put off your Armour, for our Combatte is permitted onely with Rapiers and Daggers.

Somewhat astonished was the Greeke, seeing he must leaue his Armour, but it lasted not long, because he would not bee faynted with cowardise, and so hee thus made aunswere: I am content (Syr knights) although it bee no good custome, if wee may vse our Armes, to put them off in such necessarie occasion.

At that instant he set his are against the wall, and vngyrtng his sword, and doing the like by it. The two knights had such care, and were so vigilant to watch these two weapons, that hee was scarcely disarmed, when swifter then an Eagle they presently snatched them away, that his wimbleste was not able to prohibit it. Hee neuer sawe himselfe in danger of death vntill now: for they of the Tower with those weapons are become more furious then himselfe.

They said: Dead art thou knight, for thy fiercenesse cannot deliuer thee from our handes. Onely with his dagger did the Greeke youth finde himselfe, wherewith conioyned to his inuincible and neuer daunted courage, hee beganne to defend himselfe, and with seldsene brauery to maintaine what hee had wonne, to the extreame gréepe of all that beheld him: the which, together with the sorrow conceiued to see him so disarmed, and my selfe ouerwearied, constraineth mee abruptly to leaue this warre unfinished,



## The third Booke of the third Part

finished, that after a little breathing, I may with fresh courage  
ende it in the next part, continuing the relation of the rare deeds,  
both of the famous Grækes, and valiant Pagans, their Com-  
petitors. And if herein I doe commit any of-  
fence, let, oh let your pardon and your  
fauours errede my faults,  
and then,

*Nec Laudare satis, dignasq, rependere grates  
Sufficiam, referent superi.*

**FINIS.**





The first book of the Bible  
is the book of Genesis  
which contains the history  
of the world from the  
creation of man to the  
flood. It is the first  
book of the Bible and  
is the foundation of  
the Christian religion.  
It is the first book of  
the Bible and is the  
foundation of the  
Christian religion.

1111